

HUMPHREY HOOKE

OF BRISTOL

AND HIS FAMILY

Gc
929.2
H7633t
1149469

GENEALOGY COLLECTION

mg

12

mg p. 112

✓

To



Miss Ella Robison a
faithful and loyal helper
for many years

Charles R. Hook
Decmber 1938



Hooke

Confirmed by John Hook of Manor of Bromshott, Eng., 1600

ARMS—Quarterly, sable and argent, a cross between four escallops all countercharged.

CREST—An escallop, sable, between two wings expanded, argent.

MOTTO—Esto quod esse videris. (Be what you seem to be.)

The cross represents the old Knights of St. George. The escallop shell was only worn by those holy men who took part in the crusades or presented themselves before the shrine of St. James.

HUMPHREY HOOKE

OF BRISTOL

AND HIS FAMILY AND DESCENDANTS

IN ENGLAND AND AMERICA

DURING THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY

BY

FREDERICK W. TODD

LATE OF BOSTON, MASS.

NEW HAVEN

THE TUTTLE, MOREHOUSE & TAYLOR COMPANY

1938



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2019

1149469

TABLE OF CONTENTS

	PAGE
Agamenticus Patent	10, 58, 83
Aldermen of Bristol, duties of	14
Barbadoes and the Hookes	120
Bristol, England	
Description and History	13, 31
Colonization in America	9, 17
Chichester, England—Description of	1
Gostlett family	9
Hooke—whence came the name	1
Hooke family of Chichester pedigree	4
Hooke, Humphrey—the Alderman	
Probable ancestry	4
Northwest Passage	17
Cromwellian Period	20
His family connections	31
Favored by Cromwell	35
Intimacy with Royalty	31
His manors	41
His children and grandchildren	47
Titles granted his descendants	63
His descendants in U. S. A.	71
Extract from his will	38
His will complete	Appendix 185
Hooke, Cicily—wife of Humphrey	See Young Family
Extract from her will	47
Her will complete	189
Hooke, Thomas—son of Humphrey and Cicily	47

Goodspeed - 12-00

	PAGE
Hooke, Thomas, Sir—son of Thomas and grandson of Humphrey and Cicily	52
His will complete	190
Hooke, Humphrey, Sir—son of Thomas and grandson of Humphrey and Cicily	47
His will complete	199
Hooke, Thomas—son of Sir Humphrey	49
Hooke, Francis, Major (Later of Maine)	129
Hooke, William—son of Humphrey and Cicily who emi- grated to America (Maine)	40, 58, 71, 73
His wife, Eleanor Knight	74, 78, 82, 92
His family in U. S. A.	91
Gov. of New Somersetshire (Maine)	100
Knight, Eleanor	74, 78, 82, 92
Knight, Robert	73
Money—its value, 1600	37
North, Dudley, Sir	61
North, Lord	62
Northwest Passage	17
Norton, Walter, Lt. Col.	78
Pemaquid Patent	72
Queen Anne's visit to Bristol	29
Virginia—Land grant to Hookes	121
Titles—granted lineal descendants of Humphrey and Cicily Hooke	63
Young family in Bristol	7

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

	Facing page
Coat of Arms.....	<i>Frontispiece</i>
Mr. and Mrs. Charles Ruffin Hook.....	} between viii and ix
Charles R., Jr., George M. V. and Jean C. Hook	
View of Bristol from an old engraving.....	13
View of modern Bristol.....	13
Hinton St. George, looking East	48
Hinton St. George, Crewkerne.....	48
Bristol Steep Street.....	65
St. Peter's Hospital.....	65
Salisbury, 1639.....	112
Bill presented in House of Deputies by William Hooke	118

LIST OF CHARTS

	Facing page
I. Descendants of Richard Hooke	4
II. Descendants of Robert Hooke	6
III. Descendants of Thomas Young	8
IV. Descendants of John Gostlett	10
V. Descendants of Charles Gostlett	141
VI. Descendants of Robert Scrope	155

PREFACE

Frederick William Todd, late of Boston, Massachusetts, the author of this volume, was descended on his mother's side from Alderman Humphrey Hooke of Bristol through the latter's son William Hooke who settled in what is now the southeastern-most corner of Maine, known then as the Agamenticus Patent. Mr. Todd spent much time and effort on his mother's ancestry, but died in 1903 before having it published. A bound typewritten copy, however, was made by Mr. James W. Hook of New Haven, Connecticut, and deposited in the Library of Congress. The original text, in Mr. Todd's own hand, is in the possession of his daughter, Mrs. Winfield N. Burdick, of 359 Hartford Road, South Orange, New Jersey. Especial thanks are tendered to Mrs. Burdick for her kindness in loaning the original manuscript to the printer for checking purposes, and to Mr. Robert Gay Hooke of Newark, New Jersey, also a direct descendant of Alderman Humphrey Hooke, for invaluable assistance which he gave in many ways.

The family of Hooke in America, especially those who have descended from William, son of Humphrey, as well as all others who are interested in historical research in America, are deeply indebted to Mr. Todd for the work he has done, which, of course, held no prospects for yielding him financial profit but was entirely prompted by his desire to establish a record for future generations to enjoy.

There seem to have been but two Hooke emigrants to America in the 17th century who left families that have endured to the present time. One was descended from William Hooke, son of Humphrey above referred to, and the other from Thomas Hooke who settled in Maryland *circa* 1668. James W. Hook of New Haven, Connecticut, above mentioned is a direct descendant of Thomas and the author of "James Hook and Virginia Eller," a genealogy which contains a record of Thomas Hook's descendants. There is some evidence to support the belief that Thomas, as well as William, was descended from Alderman Humphrey Hooke, but definite proof has not been found. Thomas may have been the Thomas mentioned in the Alderman's will as being the child of his grandson Humphrey Hooke. Some doubt attaches to this,

however, because the son Thomas was not mentioned in either parent's will, both of which were probated before the Maryland Thomas' death in 1697-98. The Alderman's grandson, Humphrey Hooke, was granted knighthood by Charles II after the Restoration.

Descendants of Thomas, in widely separated branches of the family, persist in the story handed down from parents and grandparents that their Hooke ancestor came first to Virginia and that he died heir to a large fortune in England. Others claim that the fortune included large properties in Virginia, and one is sure that the English property was located in Gloucestershire. These traditions lead to the conjecture that Thomas may, indeed, have been the son of Sir Humphrey Hooke of Bristol and that he came to Virginia hoping to profit from the huge quarter of land that was granted to Sir Humphrey by Charles II in 1663. Virginia authorities bitterly resisted this grant and Thomas may have removed across the Potomac into Maryland because of that fact. The grant referred to comprised the entire tract in Virginia lying between the Potomac and the Rappahannock Rivers and included the homes of the ancestral Washington and Lee families.

The publisher of this volume is descended from Alderman Humphrey Hooke by the following direct line:

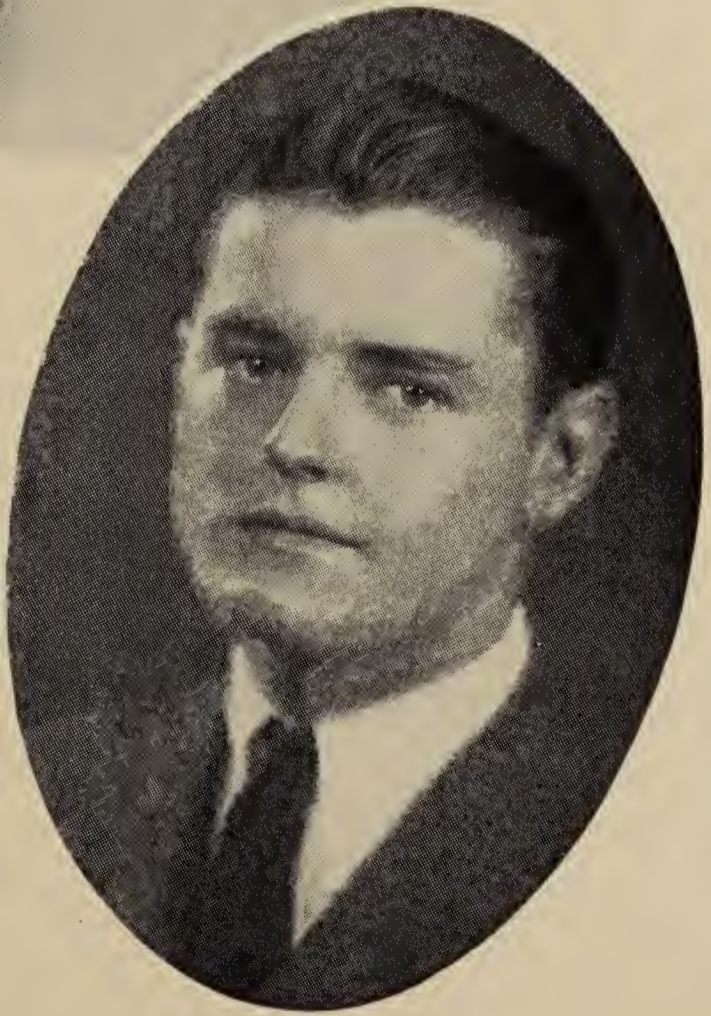
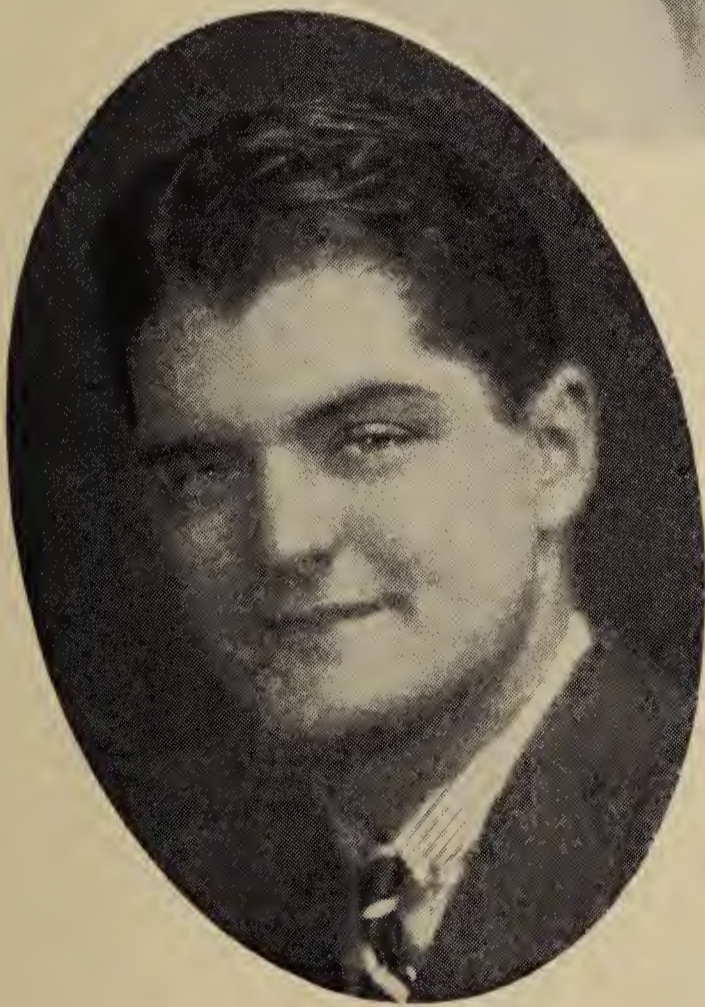
- (1) HUMPHREY HOOKE (1580-1659), of Chichester, Co. Sussex, England; removed to Bristol where he was a merchant of great wealth and influence; also sheriff, alderman and mayor of the city. He aided in colonization of North America. Married 1605, Cicely (1584-1660), dau. of Thomas Young, mayor of Bristol.
- (2) WILLIAM HOOKE (1612-52), to America, 1633; a patentee under the Agamenticus (York, Me.) patent, 1631; governor New Somersetsshire (later Province of Me.) 1638-40. He removed to Salisbury, Mass., and admitted a freeman in 1640; was a deputy to the General Court 1643-47; returned to Bristol, England, 1650, where he died in 1652. He married about 1636 Eleanor (Knight?), widow of Lt. Col. Walter Norton.
- (3) WILLIAM HOOKE (b. 1638); went to England with his father in 1650, but returned to America 1669 and resided at Salisbury, Mass. He married 1660, in England, Elizabeth Dyer.
- (4) WILLIAM HOOKE (*circa* 1665-1743), of York or Kittery, Maine, later residing at Salisbury, Mass.; married, first, 1691, Mary _____, widow of Robert Pike; married, second, 1738, Mrs. Sarah Carr, widow. No issue by second marriage.
- (5) WILLIAM HOOKE (b. 1698), of Salisbury.



CHARLES RUFFIN HOOK



MRS. CHARLES RUFFIN HOOK



JEAN CATHERINE HOOK

CHARLES RUFFIN HOOK, JR.

GEORGE M. VERITY HOOK

- (6) HUMPHREY HOOKE (HOOK) (b. 1722), of Hawk (now Danville), N. H.
- (7) HUMPHREY HOOK (b. 1765), Candia, N. H.; m. Dorothy Hill.
- (8) IRA GAGE HOOK (1808-43), of Cincinnati, Ohio; d. at Mobile, Ala.; m. 1836, Charlotte Williamson (1810-84).
- (9) HENRY HAMILTON HOOK (1839-1922), carriage mfr., Cincinnati; served in 6th Ohio Inf., later on gunboat *Carondelet* on Miss. River, in Civil War; married at Cincinnati, 1865, Katherine (d. 1892), daughter of Maj. Klussman of the British Army who came to America, 1846, settled at Cincinnati and married Catherine Dunn; issue: I—Henry Gage (b. 1866; m. Elizabeth Mary [Komans] Hoffman); II—Clarence M. (b. 1871); III—Ellen Marie (b. 1875; m. Col. Morris W. Renick); IV—Charles R., next below.
- (10) CHARLES RUFFIN HOOK, Pres. American Rolling Mill Company of Middletown, Ohio; Episcopalian; Mason; b. Cincinnati, Ohio, July 12, 1880; m. Oct. 1, 1913, Leah M., dau. of George M. Verity of Middletown, Ohio, born in Covington, Ky., Feb. 14, 1892; issue (all born in Middletown, Ohio): I—Charles R., Jr. (b. Sept. 22, 1914; educated Phillips Andover Academy and Yale University); II—George M. Verity (b. June 4, 1917; educated Phillips Andover Academy and Yale University); III—Jean Catherine (b. July 5, 1922; student at Westover School). See *Who's Who in America*.

This writer believes he speaks for all of the English descendants of the name of Hook, whether directly connected with the Alderman Humphrey Hooke family or not, when he expresses gratitude to Mr. Todd for the contribution he made by collecting and making available such a vast amount of Hooke family lore.

I cannot close this preface without expressing my great appreciation for the assistance given me by a descendant of Thomas Hooke, Mr. James W. Hook, of New Haven, Connecticut, in the preparation of this book.

CHARLES R. HOOK

MIDDLETOWN, OHIO.

FEBRUARY 15, 1938.

HUMPHREY HOOKE
OF BRISTOL
AND HIS FAMILY AND DESCENDANTS IN
ENGLAND AND AMERICA
DURING THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY
PART ONE
ENGLISH SECTION

ALDERMAN HUMPHREY HOOKE OF BRISTOL, ENGLAND

(The numbers in parentheses refer to notes in appendix)

Alderman Humphrey Hooke of Bristol, whose career I have been endeavoring to trace, belonged to a family long identified with Sussex and adjoining counties in the south of England. As the alderman refers in his will to the place of his birth, in the East street of Chichester in Sussex, that city and its neighborhood first invite our attention. At the advent of the Normans, in 1066, the representatives of this family appear to have been owners of a considerable section of country extending through three southern counties. A belief that they were people of considerable distinction among the Saxons, is to be inferred from the writings of those antiquarians who have given the matter attention. The Normans deprived the Saxons (1) of nearly every hide of land they possessed, although some of the more wealthy owners were enabled to retain portions of their land by the payment of a ransom. Many of the estates still retain the names of their ancient Saxon proprietors.

In the village of Chaggle, or Chailey (2), in the Hundred (3) of Street, Sussex, we find upon the northwestern extremity of the common an estate still the "Hooke." It was the residence of the late Sir Henry Poole, baronet, for upwards of fifty years. "The Hooke had anciently owners of the same name" (4).

About nine miles from Chailey, in a westerly direction, is "Hook farm" of which a portion is in the parish of Ashington. It was devised in 1570 by Nicholas Hitchcock to "Augustine Hitchcock, citizen of Chichester."

"At the southern extremity of the parish of Shipley is 'Hookland Park' formerly among the possessions of the Lords of Bramber.—Hooke la Stoke [is] supposed to be the ancient name" (5). At present the principal estate here "is called Knepp, probably from the knob or knoll on which a small castle formerly stood.—Of the castle nothing now remains but a part of the inner tower, or keep, sufficient to show that it was of Early Norman

architecture. It was surrounded by a moat" (6). Cartwright says: "As der Knapp signifies, in the German language, a young nobleman who is not yet a knight, who was learning the accomplishments of chivalry, this castle may have derived its name from its occupation by a scion of that Royal family, in the Saxon times, to which the castle of Bramber belonged" (7).

Hook occurs as applied to farms, lanes, and meadows, in ten parishes in Sussex. Col-hook Common in West Sussex, and Hooke, and Hook-land, in five parishes in East Sussex. For instance, in the latter section we find: "Hooke" in Chailey, West Hoathly, and Warbleton; "Hook-land" in Lindfield; "Hook's" in Hartfield. In West Sussex: "Col-hook Common" in North Chapel, and Petworth; "Hook Farm" in Bosham, Billinghamurst, and Worminghamurst; "Hook Lane" in Pagham, and "Hook Meadow" in Storrington. "Hook-wood," in Chiddingly, on the frontiers of Waldron, "still preserves the remembrances of Richard at Hoke" (8) (Ricro atte Hoke—1296).

Going in a westerly direction from the points already referred to, we find in the parish of Tichfield, Hants, the ancient manor of "Hooke." Turning to the Domesday Book (9), compiled in 1086, we find the following reference to the estate, with the name of the Norman conqueror to whom it was assigned. "Hugh de Port holds Hooke, and Germanus (his brother) holds it under him, and Norman held it of King Edward. It was then as now assessed at 1 hide" (10).

The city of Chichester, in Sussex, in the East street of which Mr. Humphrey Hooke was born in 1580, is believed to be one of the oldest Roman towns in the Kingdom. The following description of Chichester is from *Parry's Coast of Sussex*, published in 1830: "The appearance of Chichester, at a little distance, is pleasing; it is nearly embosomed in Elm trees, which follow the course of the ancient walls for the space of a mile and three quarters, above which the lofty and tapering spire of the Cathedral appears as if rising into the clouds. The body of the town consists of four streets, meeting at the large and handsome octagonal cross; these are decently built, well paved, and excellently lighted, and *the east street especially, has an air of ancient and solid respectability.*"

To give some idea of the size of the city, three years prior to the birth of Mr. Humphrey Hooke, I take the following from "Corporation Records. Receipt of Quit-rents, 1577."

"Pallant	28	tenements	or	gardens
Vintry & West Lane	7	"	"	"
East Street	19	"	"	"
South "	7	"	"	"
West "	6	"	"	"
North "	6	"	"	"
Little London	7	"	"	"

Total 80 houses within the walls"

In the Council Chamber, of the city of Chichester, is a tablet bearing the names of all the mayors of the city since the reign of Henry VIII, from which it appears that Benjamin Hooke was mayor the 13th of James I (1615), and also the 6th of Charles I (1630). Dallaway says: "It appears from the rolls, that several of the mayors represented at the same time, the city in Parliament." Extract from a Corporation Act-Book: "1687, Nov. 14. That the eldest son of an alderman, when twenty-one years old, to be admitted a Common-councilman, *according to an ancient custom.*" According to a charter granted by James I, Aldermen, the number of whom varies according to circumstances, "are such only as have served the office of Mayor." This was the custom in Bristol also. Previous to the reign of Henry VIII, it is impossible to find any list of the magistrates of Chichester, except a few here and there—names obtained from parliamentary, and different stray records. Dallaway says: "It has so happened that from two several causes, the annals of Chichester are more scanty and imperfect than those of almost every other provincial capital. Unnoticed by early historians, having been the scene of no warfare in the Norman reigns, when two leading events, the battles of Hastings and Lewes, decided the fate of the Kingdom in the eastern division of the county, Chichester appears, through successive centuries, to have been the seat of peaceful habitation and commerce." For the greater part of the same period this statement is also true of Sussex and the adjoining counties in which are situated the estates bearing the name of Hooke. Any effort therefore to trace the family from father to son back to the time of the conquest, or indeed to a period several hundred years subsequent to that time, must of course be out of the question. Horsefield says: "From the death of the Earl of Warren and Surrey, in 1347, to the time of the Reformation, the history of this section of Sussex is distinguished

by but few events that can fill up the vacuity of two centuries. The general historian, in tracing the events of past ages, is frequently compelled to pass over long periods of time respecting which information is so scanty as to leave the inquisitive mind in a state of hopeless suspense."

I give on the following page the only published pedigree of the Hooke family of Chichester and vicinity (11) that I have been able to find. It shows descendants of the brothers Henry and Thomas (the Knight of Windsor), through their respective sons John and Benjamin, other descendants if any being omitted. Henry Hooke probably had more than one son, and his father Thomas (of Dunsfold) probably had more than two. However these published family charts are generally mere fragments of information, given upon the testimony of some one member of the family, concerned only in his immediate line of descent.

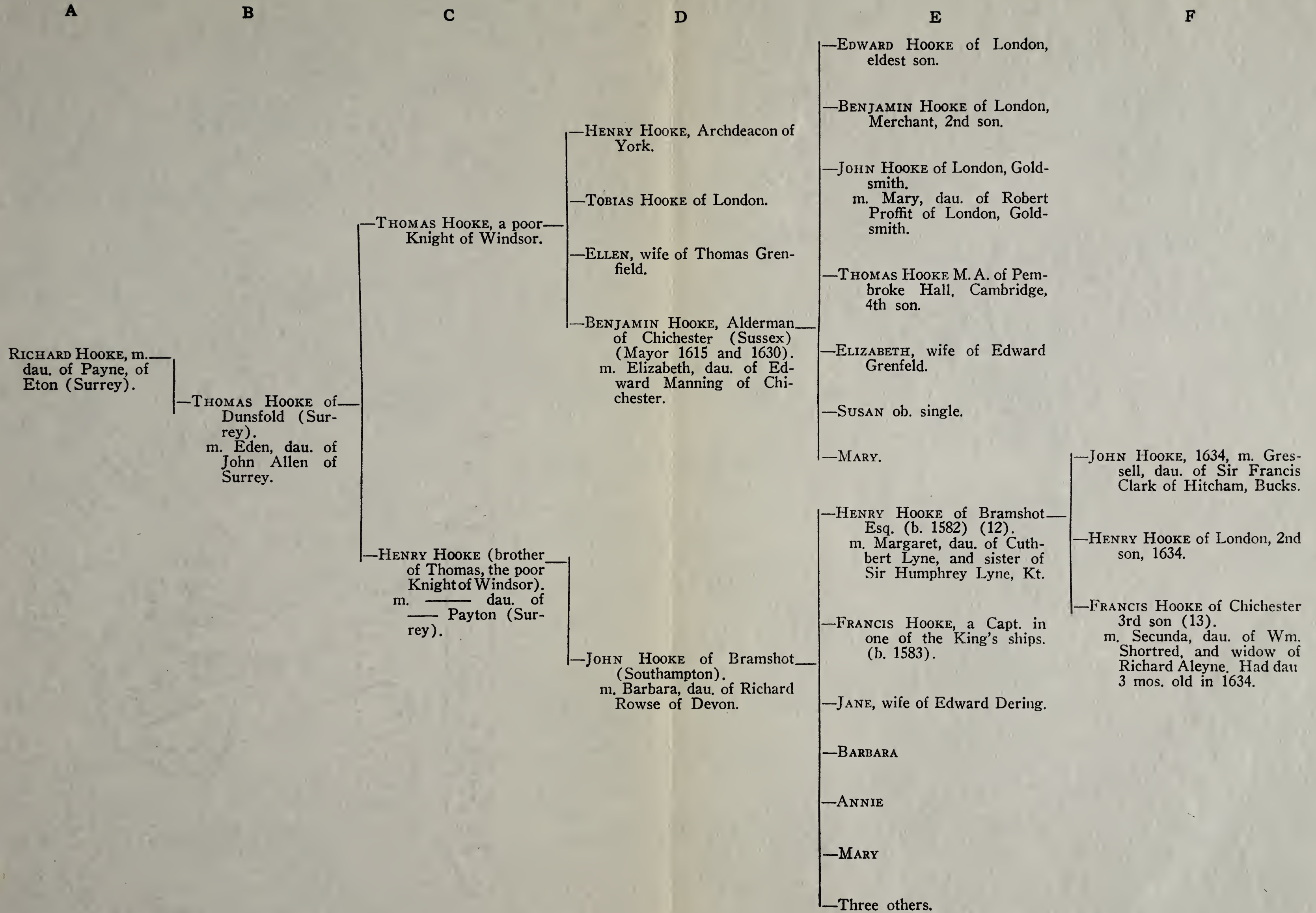
As there were only about eighty houses within the walls of Chichester, when Humphrey Hooke was born there in 1580, it would seem probable that the Hookes then in that city were not very numerous, and were *all* of the Dunsfold branch. Although his name does not appear in the pedigree quoted, Humphrey may have been a grandson of the "Knight of Windsor." This designation, "Knight of Windsor," does not imply that Thomas was a resident of Windsor. He was one of the thirteen poor knights, "to be *called* the Knights of Windsor," who were beneficiaries under the will of Henry VIII. Humphrey's father was a contemporary of those in the generation marked (D), with John Hooke of Bramshot. This brings him in line with Benjamin Hooke, Mayor of Chichester, in 1615, who had a son Edward. Humphrey however was apparently not a son of Benjamin, although he *may have been*, his name possibly having been *omitted* in the pedigree I have copied. I have certainly detected the omission of another Humphrey in the Bramshot branch of the family, and Alderman Hooke certainly had a brother named Edward. But it would seem not improbable that Thomas, the "Knight of Windsor," had a son of his own name, particularly as it was also his father's name. There was a Thomas Hooke, possibly a cousin, if not a brother of Benjamin, who received the degree of B.A. from Brasenose College, Oxford, June 18, 1575, and M.A. April 30, 1579. He was vicar of Hawkesbury (near Bristol), in Gloucestershire, from 1584 to 1612, being under the patronage of Queen Elizabeth, and his

by but few events that can fill up the vacuity of two centuries. The general historian, in tracing the events of past ages, is frequently compelled to pass over long periods of time respecting which information is so scanty as to leave the inquisitive mind in a state of hopeless suspense."

I give on the following page the only published pedigree of the Hooke family of Chichester and vicinity (11) that I have been able to find. It shows descendants of the brothers Henry and Thomas (the Knight of Windsor), through their respective sons John and Benjamin, other descendants if any being omitted. Henry Hooke probably had more than one son, and his father Thomas (of Dunsfold) probably had more than two. However these published family charts are generally mere fragments of information, given upon the testimony of some one member of the family, concerned only in his immediate line of descent.

As there were only about eighty houses within the walls of Chichester, when Humphrey Hooke was born there in 1580, it would seem probable that the Hookes then in that city were not very numerous, and were *all* of the Dunsfold branch. Although his name does not appear in the pedigree quoted, Humphrey may have been a grandson of the "Knight of Windsor." This designation, "Knight of Windsor," does not imply that Thomas was a resident of Windsor. He was one of the thirteen poor knights, "to be *called* the Knights of Windsor," who were beneficiaries under the will of Henry VIII. Humphrey's father was a contemporary of those in the generation marked (D), with John Hooke of Bramshot. This brings him in line with Benjamin Hooke, Mayor of Chichester, in 1615, who had a son Edward. Humphrey however was apparently not a son of Benjamin, although he *may have been*, his name possibly having been *omitted* in the pedigree I have copied. I have certainly detected the omission of another Humphrey in the Bramshot branch of the family, and Alderman Hooke certainly had a brother named Edward. But it would seem not improbable that Thomas, the "Knight of Windsor," had a son of his own name, particularly as it was also his father's name. There was a Thomas Hooke, possibly a cousin, if not a brother of Benjamin, who received the degree of B.A. from Brasenose College, Oxford, June 18, 1575, and M.A. April 30, 1579. He was vicar of Hawkesbury (near Bristol), in Gloucestershire, from 1584 to 1612, being under the patronage of Queen Elizabeth, and his

CHART I



A B C

1. ...
 2. ...
 3. ...
 4. ...
 5. ...
 6. ...
 7. ...
 8. ...
 9. ...
 10. ...



1. ...
 2. ...
 3. ...
 4. ...
 5. ...

preferment would seem by no means surprising if he were son or nephew of her father's beneficiary, the Knight of Windsor. He may have been living in Chichester in 1580, at the time Humphrey was born there, while his subsequent residence in Gloucestershire might account for the appearance of Humphrey (if his son) in the neighboring city of Bristol. "The Benefice of Marshfield is vicarial in the Deanery of Hawkesbury." (Bigland.) Humphrey Hooke's mother-in-law was born in Marshfield, where her father was lord of the manor, and where also she and her daughter (the future Mrs. Humphrey Hooke) may have been living, at least for a time, after the former's marriage with her second husband. The Marshfield records apparently show that a son of Mrs. Hooke's mother by her second husband was buried there in 1593. There were several Hookes in Marshfield at that time, although, so far as the records there show, Humphrey was not one of them, but we can really form no conclusion in regard to him from the records of Marshfield, since we know that he was neither born nor married there.

My study of Hooke wills in Gloucester, however, and the recurrence therein of the names of Thomas, Richard, and Henry, as well as the incidence of Chichester for the birthplace of Humphrey, suggest, as it seems to me, another and stronger probability, to wit, that Thomas Hooke of Dunsfield, Surrey, son of Richard, had sons Robert and William, both afterwards of Rendcombe, Gloucester, in addition to sons Henry and Thomas, the "Knight of Windsor." This would make John Hooke of Rendcombe, in the pedigree I have constructed (see following page), a first cousin of Benjamin Hooke, the mayor of Chichester. Regarding this supposed relationship it may be said that if Humphrey's father was John Hooke of Rendcombe, as seems not improbable, the latter's residence for a time in Chichester would seem to be due *to his family connection there*, since, if some occupation incident to a seaboard city were his *sole* inducement for leaving Rendcombe, Bristol would have been his more probable destination, that city being many times larger, its opportunities greater, and its location much nearer. This John Hooke may have been the John whose daughter S. Hook (possibly Susan, the name of the mother of John of Rendcombe) was buried in Chichester in 1576 (St. Andrew's reg.), and whose daughter Agnes was baptised there in 1584 (All Saints' reg.). Perhaps daughter Agnes was afterwards Agnes Brushe of

Nebworth, Gloucester, mentioned in will (1624) of the widow of Thomas Hooke, brother of John, in pedigree following. I can find, by the way, no other reference in Chichester to the name of Hooke at this period in the church registers, and therefore no record of the birth or baptism of Humphrey, nor any reference to Benjamin's children. Probably the Hookes of Chichester had "out of town," as well as city residences, and their children may have been baptised in the parish churches near their manor, or suburban homes (14). Perhaps John was the first one actually living in the city limits, Benjamin coming later. Probably further research in the neighborhood would throw added light upon the subject. From the Gloucester wills referred to I am able to construct the pedigree as shown.

It will be seen that nothing here given is conclusive as to Alderman Hooke's ancestry. As this question is somewhat important, perhaps a little more speculation upon the subject may not be out of place, particularly as it may be of considerable value when someone, delving perhaps for another family, unearths a further clue (15). In the Registry of St. Stephens' church in Bristol, where the burials of Alderman Hooke, and his wife and children are recorded, is the following entry of a burial which seems to be somewhat suggestive:

"1625, Oct. 26. Mrs. Jellian Hooke, widow."

The only other Hooke burials recorded in St. Stephens' from 1610 to 1622, are those of the alderman's family. The question therefore naturally arises, was Mrs. Jellian Hooke the mother of Humphrey? If she was widow of John Hooke of Rendcombe, it is possible that she was John's first cousin, daughter of his uncle William Hooke, who died in 1545, and who must at that time have been a young man, as his brother Robert lived some 30 years longer. As said uncle had a wife with this peculiar name, it is quite likely that, among the children referred to in his will, he had a daughter of the same name, who, if born in 1543, would have been 82 in 1625, and 37 when Humphrey was born. John Hooke's wife, however, may have been younger, and have been a daughter of William Hooke's widow by a *second husband*.

Will of Wyllyam Hooke of Rendcombe, dated xx May, mv cxlv. "To be buried in chyd. of Sent. pebr^r in Rendcombe. Sonne Wyl-

1. The first part of the book deals with the history of the British Empire in the East. It covers the period from the early days of exploration to the present time. The author discusses the various factors which led to the expansion of the Empire and the consequences of its growth. He also examines the different forms of imperialism and the role of the British in the East.

2. The second part of the book is devoted to the study of the British Empire in the West. It deals with the history of the United States and Canada and their relationship with the British Empire. The author analyzes the impact of British imperialism on the development of these two countries and the role of the British in the West.

3. The third part of the book is a study of the British Empire in Africa. It examines the history of British colonialism in Africa and the role of the British in the development of the continent. The author discusses the various forms of imperialism and the consequences of British rule in Africa.

4. The fourth part of the book is a study of the British Empire in Asia. It examines the history of British colonialism in Asia and the role of the British in the development of the continent. The author discusses the various forms of imperialism and the consequences of British rule in Asia.

5. The fifth part of the book is a study of the British Empire in the Pacific. It examines the history of British colonialism in the Pacific and the role of the British in the development of the region. The author discusses the various forms of imperialism and the consequences of British rule in the Pacific.

The first part of the book deals with the history of the British Empire in the East. It covers the period from the early days of exploration to the present time. The author discusses the various factors which led to the expansion of the Empire and the consequences of its growth. He also examines the different forms of imperialism and the role of the British in the East.

The second part of the book is devoted to the study of the British Empire in the West. It deals with the history of the United States and Canada and their relationship with the British Empire. The author analyzes the impact of British imperialism on the development of these two countries and the role of the British in the West.

The third part of the book is a study of the British Empire in Africa. It examines the history of British colonialism in Africa and the role of the British in the development of the continent. The author discusses the various forms of imperialism and the consequences of British rule in Africa.

The fourth part of the book is a study of the British Empire in Asia. It examines the history of British colonialism in Asia and the role of the British in the development of the continent. The author discusses the various forms of imperialism and the consequences of British rule in Asia.

The fifth part of the book is a study of the British Empire in the Pacific. It examines the history of British colonialism in the Pacific and the role of the British in the development of the region. The author discusses the various forms of imperialism and the consequences of British rule in the Pacific.

Nebworth, Gloucester, mentioned in will (1624) of the widow of Thomas Hooke, brother of John, in pedigree following. I can find, by the way, no other reference in Chichester to the name of Hooke at this period in the church registers, and therefore no record of the birth or baptism of Humphrey, nor any reference to Benjamin's children. Probably the Hookes of Chichester had "out of town," as well as city residences, and their children may have been baptised in the parish churches near their manor, or suburban homes (14). Perhaps John was the first one actually living in the city limits, Benjamin coming later. Probably further research in the neighborhood would throw added light upon the subject. From the Gloucester wills referred to I am able to construct the pedigree as shown.

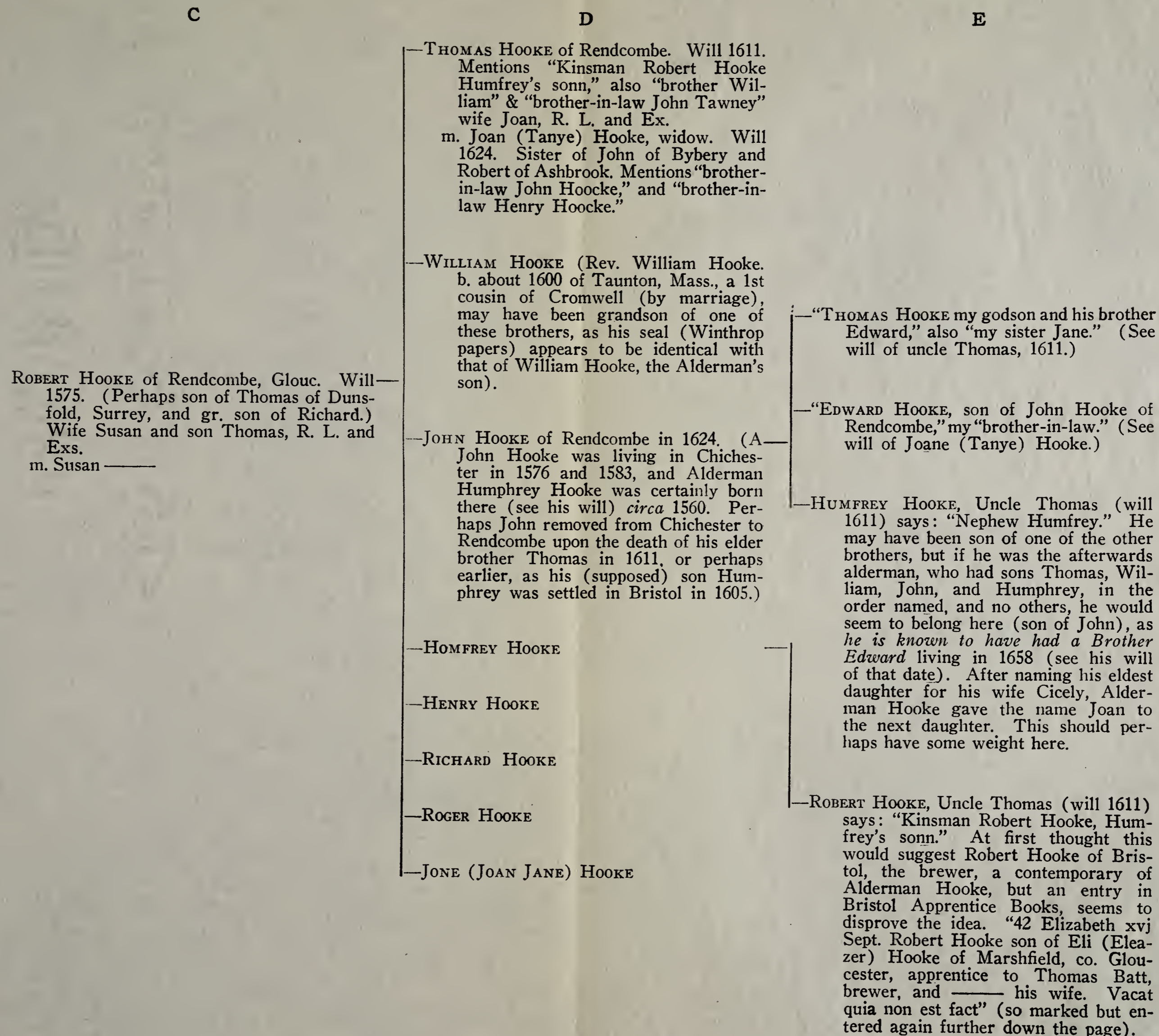
It will be seen that nothing here given is conclusive as to Alderman Hooke's ancestry. As this question is somewhat important, perhaps a little more speculation upon the subject may not be out of place, particularly as it may be of considerable value when someone, delving perhaps for another family, unearths a further clue (15). In the Registry of St. Stephens' church in Bristol, where the burials of Alderman Hooke, and his wife and children are recorded, is the following entry of a burial which seems to be somewhat suggestive:

"1625, Oct. 26. Mrs. Jellian Hooke, widow."

The only other Hooke burials recorded in St. Stephens' from 1610 to 1622, are those of the alderman's family. The question therefore naturally arises, was Mrs. Jellian Hooke the mother of Humphrey? If she was widow of John Hooke of Rendcombe, it is possible that she was John's first cousin, daughter of his uncle William Hooke, who died in 1545, and who must at that time have been a young man, as his brother Robert lived some 30 years longer. As said uncle had a wife with this peculiar name, it is quite likely that, among the children referred to in his will, he had a daughter of the same name, who, if born in 1543, would have been 82 in 1625, and 37 when Humphrey was born. John Hooke's wife, however, may have been younger, and have been a daughter of William Hooke's widow by a *second husband*.

Will of Wyllyam Hooke of Rendcombe, dated xx May, mv cxlv. "To be buried in chyd. of Sent. peb^r in Rendcombe. Sonne Wyl-

CHART II



lyam. To Eu^rey chylde .y^t I have etc., *Jelean Hooke* my wyfe whom I make for my exseutryx.

“Wit: Sir george godney, my gostly father, & Robt. Hooke, Proved xxii September 1545.”

Early in the 17th century Mr. Humphrey Hooke, of the English city of Bristol, was living in the parish of St. Stephens. Beneath its church walls lies remains, and those of his wife Cicely. (16).

Burials from St. Stephens' registry: “1659, Mar. 31. Mr. Humphrey Hooke, alderman.” The following year, “1660, Oct. 3 Mrs. Sicily Hooke, widdow.”

I have, as may be inferred, been unable to determine what Mr. Hooke's age was when he left Chichester, and I have found nothing to indicate at what date, and under what auspices, he made his first appearance in Bristol (there is a break in the Burgess Books, which might give some hint, from 1599 to 1607), but he was probably in the latter city before 1605, as in that year he married Cicely Young (bapt. Christ's Church, Bristol, Dec. 17, 1584), daughter of Thomas Young, “merchant and burgess of Bristol,” and mayor there in 1579. By his marriage with her Humphrey Hooke obtained his freedom of the city. This fact is indicated by the following entry in the Bristol Audit Books:

“1605. ffeb. the xth daye.

Humphrie Hooke m^rchant is admitted into the liberties of this city, for that he marryed Cicelye the daughter of Tho^{ms} Young, m^rchant.” (17).

He was about twenty-eight years of age in 1608, when his eldest son Thomas (father of Sir Humphrey and Sir Thomas Hooke) was born. Later we find him a merchant of great wealth and influence in Bristol, and an alderman, and mayor there, when that ancient borough was the largest city (18), and chief commercial port in England, next to London.

The Young family appears to have been prominent in Bristol for over 200 years prior to this time. Mrs. Hooke's ancestor, Thomas Young, was mayor in 1410, and again in 1420. *Burke* says: “Thomas Young, mayor of Bristol 12, Henry IV, styles himself in his last will and testament bearing date 14th March 1426, burgess of Bristol, and orders his body buried before the alter of St. Nicholas in the church of St. Thomas the Martyr.” He left two sons, Thomas and Sir John. Thomas Young, the elder, was a distinguished lawyer, and M.P. for Bristol, *temp.* Henry VI,

was constituted 15 Edward IV, one of the judges of the court of the King's Bench. He died in 1476, and was buried in Christ Church, London (19), "leaving eldest son Thomas Young, who has a mansion in Wynch street Bristol." Sir John Young, Knt., the second son of the Thomas first mentioned, was lord mayor of London, and M.P. for that city 33 Henry VI. Mrs. Hooke's father, Thomas Young comes in the third generation after Thomas with "a mansion in Wynch street." He was son of Thomas Young, Sr., merchant and burgess of Bristol (see Bristol Burgess Books), and a brother of Richard Young (will 1581). John Young, son of Hugh Young, gent., was probably a first cousin of Mrs. Hooke's father, Thomas Young, Jr. His house was on St. Augustine-Back, opposite Alderman Hooke's house on the Quay, and was the one afterwards occupied by Sir Ferdinando Gorges. Queen Elizabeth, who came to Bristol in 1574, was entertained for seven days at the house of John Young, whom she knighted on her departure. Sir John Young died in 1589, leaving son Robert aged 18. This Robert, born *circa* 1571 (matric. Corpus Christi College, Oxford, July 8, 1586, age 15), was knighted Apr. 1, 1604. His sister Ann Bridgeman of St. Augustine ch. (will 1606), mentions Nicholas Young, son of Sir Robert Young, my brother, by his first wife.

My study of the Young family of Bristol has not been as comprehensive as I could wish, but I have arranged the material at hand in the pedigree following. The larger part of it I have accurately determined. Where there is room for a little uncertainty, or where I have neglected, or have failed to get conclusive evidence upon any point, I have indicated it.

Thomas Young, the twice mayor, who was born some time in the 14th century, is the first one of the name in Bristol of whom I can find any record. He was evidently possessed of an estate large enough to enable his descendants to become prominent in the city, as merchants, mayors, and burgesses for some two hundred years thereafter. Judging by the property referred to in his will, in 1426, he was probably one of the largest owners of houses, lands, shops and tenements in the city in his day. Referring to the close of the 14th century, Aubrey says: "The Bristol merchants were men of wealth and renown, living splendidly in large houses, the spacious cellars stored with goods, the walls of the dwelling-rooms hung with Arras tapistry, and having plate that rivalled the pos-

—THOMAS YOUNG, JR. (in 1580)—
Merchant and Burgess of
Bristol. 20 Elizabeth, ij
Dec. Thomas Young, Jr.
son of Thomas Young, Sr.
merchant & burgess. (Bris-
tol Burgess Books) d.
circa 1587. b. say 1557.
m. Fortune, bapt. Dec. 27,
1561, dau. of Wm. Gost-
lett, lord of Marshfield
manor, Glou. Fortune m.
2d William Stanlake of
Bristol, merchant (21).

—RICHARD YOUNG of Bristol,
Esq. (22). Probably also
brother

—WILLIAM YOUNG (23)?

—SIR JOHN YOUNG of Bristol,—
Kt. Will 1589. 19 Eliza-
beth xix Sept. John Young,
Kt., son of Hugh Young,
gent. (Bristol Burgess
Books.)
m. Joan, dau. of John Wad-
ham of Merrifield, Somer-
set. His will 1577. Dame
Joan's will 1603.

—SIR WM. YOUNG (24) of Ba-
sildon, Berks, Kt. (sole
issue). Living in 1611.
Died s.p.
m. Anne, dau. & coheir of
Sir Richard Poulett. Will
of latter, 1611. (Somerset)
Dau. Anne, wife of Sir
Wm. Young of Basildon,
Berks. My friend and
adopted sister Lady Cath-
erine Lidcot.

—THOMAS YOUNG, bapt. Dec.
23, 1580 (25).

—FORTUNE, bapt. Feb. 23, 1582.

—CICELY, bapt. Dec. 17, 1584.
m. Humphrey Hooke, Esq.
b. *circa* 1580. m. 1605.
Grandfather of Sir Hum-
phrey Hooke, Kt., and
of Sir Thomas Hooke,
baronet.

—ANNE, bapt. May 28, 1586.

—SIR ROBERT YOUNG, Kt. b.
1571. Knighted Apr. 1,
1604. Matric. Corpus
Christi College, Oxford.
July 8, 1586.

—ANN

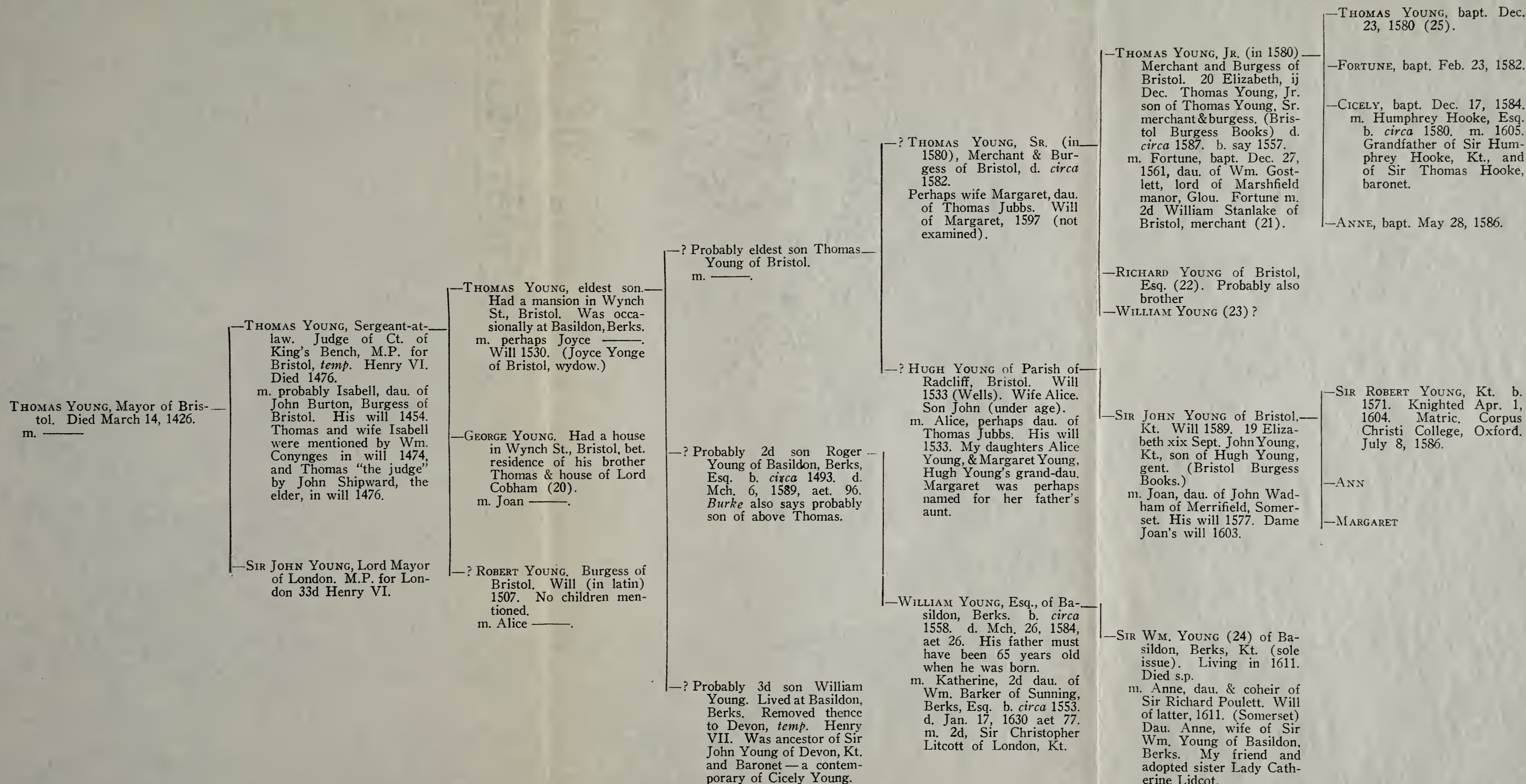
—MARGARET

was constituted 15 Edward IV, one of the judges of the court of the King's Bench. He died in 1476, and was buried in Christ Church, London (19), "leaving eldest son Thomas Young, who has a mansion in Wynch street Bristol." Sir John Young, Knt., the second son of the Thomas first mentioned, was lord mayor of London, and M.P. for that city 33 Henry VI. Mrs. Hooke's father, Thomas Young comes in the third generation after Thomas with "a mansion in Wynch street." He was son of Thomas Young, Sr., merchant and burgess of Bristol (see Bristol Burgess Books), and a brother of Richard Young (will 1581). John Young, son of Hugh Young, gent., was probably a first cousin of Mrs. Hooke's father, Thomas Young, Jr. His house was on St. Augustine-Back, opposite Alderman Hooke's house on the Quay, and was the one afterwards occupied by Sir Ferdinando Gorges. Queen Elizabeth, who came to Bristol in 1574, was entertained for seven days at the house of John Young, whom she knighted on her departure. Sir John Young died in 1589, leaving son Robert aged 18. This Robert, born *circa* 1571 (matric. Corpus Christi College, Oxford, July 8, 1586, age 15), was knighted Apr. 1, 1604. His sister Ann Bridgeman of St. Augustine ch. (will 1606), mentions Nicholas Young, son of Sir Robert Young, my brother, by his first wife.

My study of the Young family of Bristol has not been as comprehensive as I could wish, but I have arranged the material at hand in the pedigree following. The larger part of it I have accurately determined. Where there is room for a little uncertainty, or where I have neglected, or have failed to get conclusive evidence upon any point, I have indicated it.

Thomas Young, the twice mayor, who was born some time in the 14th century, is the first one of the name in Bristol of whom I can find any record. He was evidently possessed of an estate large enough to enable his descendants to become prominent in the city, as merchants, mayors, and burgesses for some two hundred years thereafter. Judging by the property referred to in his will, in 1426, he was probably one of the largest owners of houses, lands, shops and tenements in the city in his day. Referring to the close of the 14th century, Aubrey says: "The Bristol merchants were men of wealth and renown, living splendidly in large houses, the spacious cellars stored with goods, the walls of the dwelling-rooms hung with Arras tapistry, and having plate that rivalled the pos-

CHART III



sessions of the nobles." Thomas Young, the judge, son of the above Thomas, not to mention other descendants of the latter (most of whom were merchants), in those days when the mercantile profession was a kind of monopoly, no doubt added very materially to the possessions of the family. It is safe to assume, therefore, that Cicely Young had a dowry of very respectable size when she married Humphrey Hooke.

The pedigree facing page 10 gives the maternal ancestry of Cicely Young who was daughter of Fortune Gostlett, and grand-daughter of William Gostlett, lord of Marshfield manor in 1608 (26). Fortune (Gostlett) Young appears to have been named for her grandmother Fortune Chambers. Her daughter, Cicely (Young) Hooke (27), gave this somewhat unusual name to one of her daughters—naming the first one evidently for herself, the second for her grandmother, or perhaps her husband's only aunt on the paternal side, and the third for her mother, "Fortune."

"The merchants of Bristol were early and deeply engaged in enterprises of American discovery" (28). Sebastian Cabot, born in Bristol, was the first Englishman who landed in America, and the earliest to discover that portion of the continent now occupied by the Anglo-Saxon race, thereby securing its English colonization.

"This year (1497), on St. John the Baptist's day, the land of America was found by the merchants of Bristowe in a ship of Bristol called the 'Matthew,' the which said ship departed from the port of Bristowe the 2d of May, and came home again 6th August following" (29).

"Thus England," in the words of Mr. Thornton (30), "was indebted to Bristol for the acquisition of her American Dominions. They waited not, as in France and Spain, for the direction and help of the government; but at the outset with a noble independence and self reliance, assumed that 'the planting of the Western world was a thing that might be done without the ayde of the Prince's power and purse.'"

"When in 1574 Sir Humphrey Gilbert, and his comrades, petitioned Queen Elizabeth for leave to start an expedition of discovery and trade to the northern parts of America, as 'of all unfrequented places the only most fittest and most commodious for us to intermeddle withal,' we find that the city of Bristol very readily offered £1000 (31) towards the £4000 necessary for the undertaking. . . It was chiefly through the perserverence of Bristol men

that Virginia, after the failure of Raleigh's experiment, became a nucleus for all the southern parts of the United States; and that in like manner the northern colonies, growing out of the New England settlement, were strengthened and extended" (32).

Mr. Hooke appears to have been interested in American colonial plantations almost from his first establishment in Bristol as a merchant. By letters-patent dated April 27, 1610, King James I granted certain territory in Newfoundland to a corporation entitled "The Treasurer and The Company of Adventurers and Planters of the Citie of London and Bristol for the Colony or Plantation of Newfoundland." The grant covered the territory between Cape Bonavista and Cape St. Mary, and all the seas and islands within ten miles of the coast from latitude 46° to 52° N. The grantees were Henry, Earl of Northampton, Keeper of the Privy Seal; Sir Lawrence Tanfield, Baron of the Exchequer; Sir John Doddridge, Sergeant-at-law; Sir Francis Bacon (33), Solicitor-General; Sir Daniel Dun, Sir Walter Cope, Sir Percival Willoughby, and Sir John Constable, Knights; with certain merchants of London, and the following Bristol merchants: Thomas Aldworth (mayor 1582 and 1592), William Lewis, John Guy (mayor 1618), Richard Hallworthy (mayor 1635), John Langton (mayor 1628), Humphrey Hooke (mayor 1629 and 1643), Philip Guy, William Meridith, Abram Jenings, and John Doughtie (mayor 1620).

The Bristol merchants seem to have been most actively engaged in starting a colony under this patent, as a settlement was begun at once by Mr. John Guy of Bristol, at Cupers, or Cuperts, near Mosquito Cove, in Conception Bay. This was the first permanent plantation on the island. In 1615, five years before the Pilgrims came to Plymouth, there were on the coast of Newfoundland 250 sail of English ships, great and small, with a burden amounting in the aggregate to more than fifteen thousand tons. The value of the train oil taken was estimated at £15,000, and the total value of oil and fish at £135,000.

Mr. Hooke's interest in the *Agamenticus* patent will be referred to later, when treating of his second son, Mr. William Hooke, our American ancestor.

Next to their enterprise in discovery and colonization, the merchants of Bristol have been commended for their patriotic action, and great activity, in defence of the Kingdom on the high seas. Special privileges were granted to the merchants of Bristol by act of Parliament during the reign of Elizabeth (34), in con-

... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..

... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..

... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..

... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..

... ..
... ..
... ..

...

...

that Virginia, after the failure of Raleigh's experiment, became a nucleus for all the southern parts of the United States; and that in like manner the northern colonies, growing out of the New England settlement, were strengthened and extended" (32).

Mr. Hooke appears to have been interested in American colonial plantations almost from his first establishment in Bristol as a merchant. By letters-patent dated April 27, 1610, King James I granted certain territory in Newfoundland to a corporation entitled "The Treasurer and The Company of Adventurers and Planters of the Citie of London and Bristol for the Colony or Plantation of Newfoundland." The grant covered the territory between Cape Bonavista and Cape St. Mary, and all the seas and islands within ten miles of the coast from latitude 46° to 52° N. The grantees were Henry, Earl of Northampton, Keeper of the Privy Seal; Sir Lawrence Tanfield, Baron of the Exchequer; Sir John Doddridge, Sergeant-at-law; Sir Francis Bacon (33), Solicitor-General; Sir Daniel Dun, Sir Walter Cope, Sir Percival Willoughby, and Sir John Constable, Knights; with certain merchants of London, and the following Bristol merchants: Thomas Aldworth (mayor 1582 and 1592), William Lewis, John Guy (mayor 1618), Richard Hallworthy (mayor 1635), John Langton (mayor 1628), Humphrey Hooke (mayor 1629 and 1643), Philip Guy, William Meridith, Abram Jenings, and John Doughtie (mayor 1620).

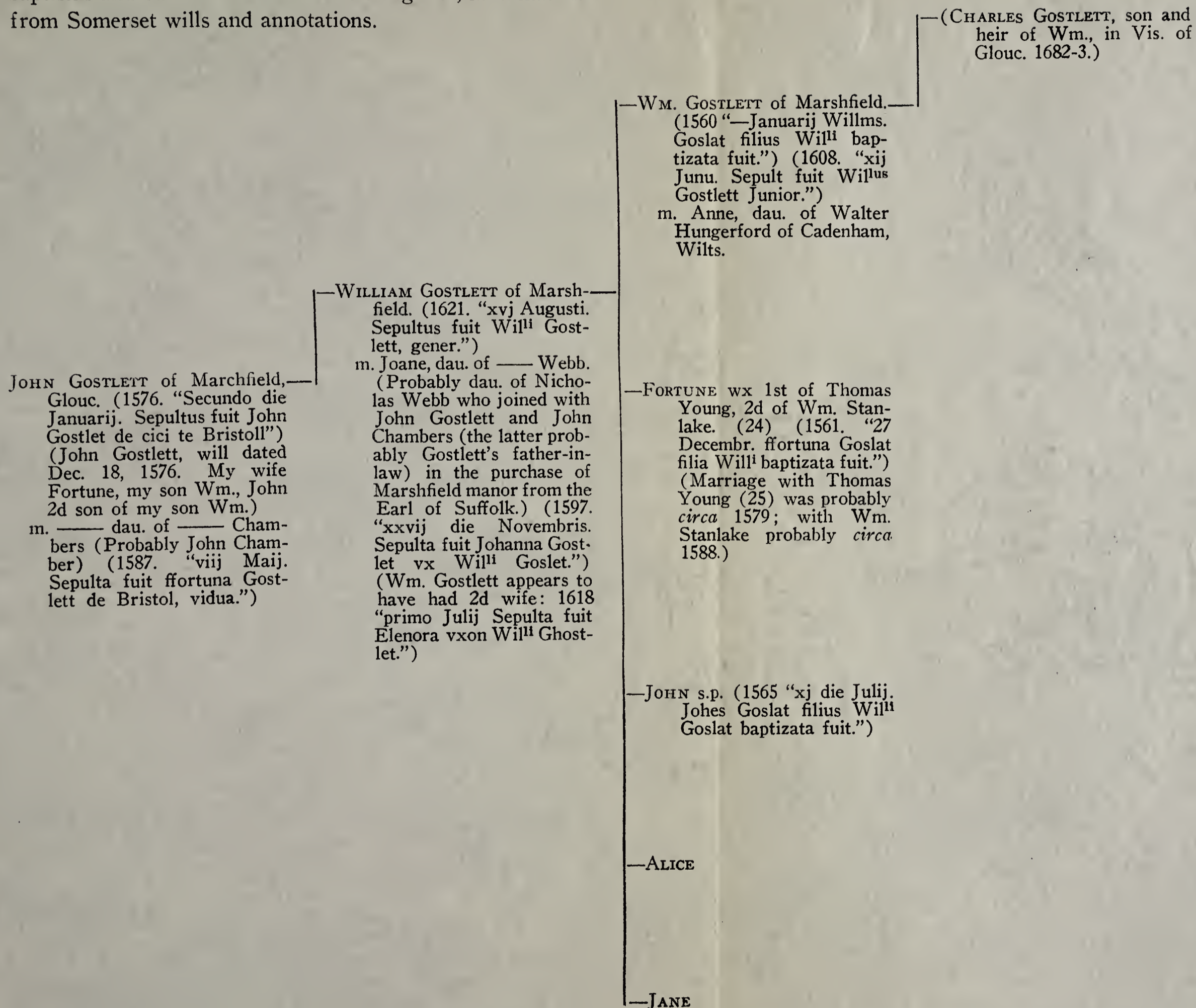
The Bristol merchants seem to have been most actively engaged in starting a colony under this patent, as a settlement was begun at once by Mr. John Guy of Bristol, at Cupers, or Cuperts, near Mosquito Cove, in Conception Bay. This was the first permanent plantation on the island. In 1615, five years before the Pilgrims came to Plymouth, there were on the coast of Newfoundland 250 sail of English ships, great and small, with a burden amounting in the aggregate to more than fifteen thousand tons. The value of the train oil taken was estimated at £15,000, and the total value of oil and fish at £135,000.

Mr. Hooke's interest in the Agamenticus patent will be referred to later, when treating of his second son, Mr. William Hooke, our American ancestor.

Next to their enterprise in discovery and colonization, the merchants of Bristol have been commended for their patriotic action, and great activity, in defence of the Kingdom on the high seas. Special privileges were granted to the merchants of Bristol by act of Parliament during the reign of Elizabeth (34), in con-

CHART IV

Pedigree from Visitation of Gloucestershire, 1623 (Harleian Soc.), to which I have added, in parentheses, baptisms and burials from Marshfield register, information from Somerset wills and annotations.



sideration of their having aided the Queen with twenty-five ships for the defence of the realm.

In naval warfare it had long been recognized as a proper mode of conducting hostilities, to grant "Letters of Marque" to merchant vessels, owned, manned, and officered by private persons. In fact the custom was continued by European nations for many years after this period, and, although latterly but little followed, was not finally abolished by them until 1856. But in the early part of the 17th century, the English government, in its naval conflicts, placed great reliance upon the assistance of vessels owned and armed by the merchants of the seaboard cities and towns (35). They were given the plunder they succeeded in capturing as a recompense for the hazard they encountered, and the expense they incurred. Their undertakings occasionally proved highly profitable, in the way of prizes, but were more frequently the reverse; so that, if the patriotic incentive had been absent, it is doubtful if they would have been attempted to any great extent by those belonging strictly to the merchant classes.

Between 1626 and 1630, very many "Letters of Marque" were issued, not only to take pirates (chiefly Turks and Algerines—then a constant scourge of the sea), but to assume the offensive in wars both with France and Spain. It appears by State Papers (Charles I) in Her Majesty's Public Record Office, that "Letters of Marque, or Commissions to take Pirates" (36) were issued June 16th and 19th, 1626, to Humfrey Hooke's ship *Abraham* of Bristol, 150 tons, Capt. Robert Hull, June 7, 1627, to the same rated at 200 tons, June 10, 1627, to Humfrey Hooke and others (his eldest son Thomas appears as his partner from and after this date until his death in 1643), the ship *James*, of Bristol, 100 tons, Alexander Penery, Capt., Aug. 28, 1627, to Humfrey Hooke and others, the *Eagle*, of Bristol, 140 tons, John Gane, Capt., and the *Falcon*, 40 tons, Thomas Morgan, Capt., May 3, 1628, to Humfrey Hooke, the little *Charles* (37), of Bristol, 80 tons, John Tippet, Capt., Aug. 14, 1628, to Humfrey Hooke and others, the ship *Eagle*, of Bristol, 140 tons, Richard Taylor, Capt., Aug. 10, 1630, to Humfrey Hooke and others, the ship *Eagle*, of Bristol (again), Richard Taylor, Capt., and the ship *Pelican*, 50 tons, John Shannon, Capt., June 2, 1629, "Petition of Capt. Charles Driver to the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty. In September, 1626, the merchants of Bristol received a commission from the late Lord Admiral for Surprising Pirates, and thereupon Humphrey Hooke

and Humphrey Browne (sheriff of Bristol in 1619), set out ships under the command of the petitioner and Robert Hull (Capt. of the ship *Abraham*), who took a Sallee-man (Algerine pirate) and sent her into Bristol where she was condemned. On complaint of some merchants of London petitioner is now sent for to appear before the Council for taking the same prize. Prays the Lords Commissioners to be a means for his speedy dispatch" (38). Dec. 16, 1630, Bristol, William Willett to Nicholas, "The 'Eagle' of that place, a fortunate ship, has brought in a Brazilman, with about 300 chests of sugar and some hides. The ship, the Ark. The prize belongs to Mr. Hooke and his partners, *the only happy man that way*. The prizes this ship has taken have not been so little worth as 40,000 £" (39).

At the beginning of the 17th Century the average yearly revenue of the Kingdom was hardly more than two millions of dollars, or only about ten times the value of the prizes taken by this single ship. Revenue in 1607, \$1,900,000, *N. Molin Relazione*. About the same figures are given by *Marcantonio Correr*, ambassador in 1611. As the value of money at that period was about five times its present value, this £40,000 would be equivalent in purchasing power, at the present time, to about \$1,000,000 of our money.

FAC-SIMILE OF ALDERMAN HOOKE'S SIGNATURE FROM
BRISTOL AUDIT BOOK, 1628

Mr. Humphrey Hooke was made sheriff of Bristol in 1614. He must have been a member of the Council before that date as the sheriffs were chosen from that body. He was then about thirty-four years of age. He was chosen mayor in 1629 and 1643. He was appointed an alderman probably about the year 1630, and in that capacity represented the parish of St. Stephens, which extends along Clare street, the Quay, Marsh street, King street, Prince's street, and into Queen's Square, one-half of which belongs to this parish. It included within its precincts the city residences of numerous wealthy merchants, Mr. Hooke's residence being among



VIEW OF BRISTOL, FROM AN OLD ENGRAVING REPRODUCED IN
"THE CENTURY" FOR MARCH 1900



VIEW OF MODERN BRISTOL SHOWING ST. AUGUSTINE BACK IN THE
FOREGROUND AND AT THE LEFT

On the opposite side of the river, at the right, is the old Quay, back of which the square tower of St. Stephen's Church may be seen. The site of Alderman Hooke's house on the Quay is in the range of vision. It was opposite the house of Sir Ferdinando Gorges (Colston's school) on St. Augustine Back, the latter house being just beyond the optician's sign in line with the flagstaff.

the number. It was probably one of the largest parishes in the city in Mr. Hooke's day, and was certainly the largest, next to St. James, in 1712, having that year 412 houses. Alderman Hooke represented the city of Bristol in the Short and Long Parliaments.

In the list of those summoned by King Charles I, to compose the Short (so called) Parliament which met April 13, 1640, as given by Rushworth, we find under head of Bristol:

“Humphrey Hooke Esq; Alderman—City of Bristol, and John Glanvil, Sergeant at Law.”

On the 15th of April 1640, “His Majesty being Seated on his Throne, Mr. Sergeant Glanvile was called in, being presented by the House of Commons as their Speaker” (40). This was the first parliament that had met for *eleven years*. It “demanded the redress of grievances, the abandonment of the claim to levy ship-money, and a complete change in the ecclesiastical system. Charles thought it would not be worth while even to conquer Scotland on such terms” (41), and so dissolved parliament May 5, after a session of hardly more than three weeks. Still “the moderation of this assembly has been highly extolled by the most distinguished Royalists, and seemed to have caused no little vexation and disappointment to the chiefs of the opposition. . . . Between the dissolution of this short-lived assembly, and the meeting of that ever memorable body known by the name of the Long Parliament” (42), a few months only intervened. The Long Parliament met Nov. 3, 1640. Bristol was represented therein by Alderman Humphrey Hooke and Richard Long. The troubles which arose between this Parliament and the King are matters of general knowledge. “In August 1642 the sword was at length drawn; and soon in almost every shire of the Kingdom, the hostile factions appeared in arms against each other” (43).

The view on the opposite page appears to have been taken from Brandon Hill. The square tower of St. Stephen's church, at the left centre I have marked with an X. From its base a forest of masts, extending to about the centre of the picture, may be seen. These indicate the ships in the river Frome, facing the old Quay, the approach to which from the Avon is seen at the right, at which point may also be seen the open space called the Marsh,—a place for training and recreation, College Green, with its rows of trees, and flanked by the Mayor's chapel, is a prominent feature at the left of the cathedral, beyond which, on the further side of the

Frome which at this point is not visible, the square of buildings with an open space in the centre is presumably Queen Square, half of which is in the parish of St. Stephen. Queen Square contains seven and one-half acres of ground, and was the principal scene of the riots of 1831, during which two of its sides were destroyed by fire.

The position of an alderman in the city of Bristol was one of extraordinary power and authority, and was held in great honor and respect in Mr. Hooke's day. It was practically only open to those who had first filled the office of Mayor of the city, and then only in case of the death or removal of one of the twelve incumbents. During the period we are at present considering (17th Century) it will be found that an alderman of Bristol always desired to be known by that title, even though he may have held other titles to which, at the present time, we attach greater honor and distinction. The word Alderman is derived from the Anglo-Saxon *ealderman*. "The word implies the possession of an office of rank or dignity; and among the Anglo-Saxons, earls, governors of provinces, and other persons of distinction received the title" (44). The aldermen of Bristol were not only magistrates of the city, but were also administrators of justice; no appeal to any higher court in the Kingdom being permitted. They (with the mayor) also constituted, under charter of Edward IV, a Court of Admiralty; being exempted by land and water from the jurisdiction of the Admiral of England. On all official and public occasions, they took precedence over knights and baronets (45), and they held office practically *for life*. They had the highest mark of honor granted to magistracy, scarlet ermined gowns, gold fringed gloves, the pearl sword, the mace, and the cap of maintenance (46). They acquired their authority under a charter granted to the corporation of Bristol at the beginning of the 16th Century (17th Dec. 15 Henry VII, A. D. 1409), and renewed by Queen Elizabeth (28th July 23 Elizth., A. D. 1581); the number of aldermen at the latter date being increased from six to twelve—one from each parish: St. Michaels, St. Stephens, St. James, etc. The charter as it then existed provides that on the death of an alderman, the *remaining aldermen* shall appoint his successor, who shall be chosen, as far as possible, from those "*who have before borne and held the office of Mayor of the said City. . . . The Mayor, and two of the Aldermen,*" to choose the common-councilmen. Mayor and aldermen,

as before, to be justices for keeping, and causing to be kept, the statutes and ordinances made at Westminster; inquiring into treasons and felonies, and proceeding on indictments. To have all fines without giving account to the exchequer. *No justices having authority under the crown shall interfere with them.* May punish disobedient and refractory persons. Mayor and aldermen to hold court, determine pleas, and execute process. May enter merchandise *free of all tolls, customs, etc.* Thus the aldermen were the sole judges of whom they should admit into their own body, provided a selection was made from those who had been mayors, and they practically controlled the appointment of all the rest of the corporation, including the mayor and the two sheriffs, all three of whom held office for one year only, unless reappointed. In their own body the rank of the alderman was determined by seniority. Under a new charter, granted by Charles II, in 1684, aldermen to hold office "during their natural and respective lives," and to enjoy all the "authorities, jurisdictions, liberties, privileges" etc., held by them under their previous charters (47). To the special privileges granted to the aldermen by the city charter, there should be added (as the aldermen were chiefly merchants) those acquired by the latter under the charter granted to the Society of Merchant Venturers. This society, still in existence, and very wealthy and influential, was incorporated by Edward IV. The charter, "with its great waxen seal as large as a dinner plate and twice as heavy" (48), was "confirmed by act of Parliament, in the eighth year of Elizabeth, and in consideration of the Merchant Venturers having aided the Queen with twenty-five ships for the defence of the realm, it was further enacted that any who should exercise the recourse of merchandize beyond the seas unless admitted into the Society, or else serving or apprenticed to the mystery for seven years (should be subjected to) the penalty of forfeiture of all the goods and merchandizes so trafficked in, one moiety to the crown, the other to be divided between the society and the civic corporation. . . . The proper characteristic of the company, as qualified by their charters, of being a guild of commerce and nothing more, has been practically changed in modern times. In respect to being a kind of feudal corporation and *monopolists* of foreign trade, *its once enormous power has collapsed*" (49).

The custom of granting special privileges, such as were enjoyed by the merchants and the civic corporation, while probably a sur-

vival of customs incident to, or growing out of, the feudal state, was doubtless some advance or improvement upon the state of things which preceded it. As the customs prevalent at any given period in a nation's growth or progress are often found to have been necessary and valuable as a basis for subsequent progress, it may perhaps be contended that the custom of granting monopolies at that period was an important factor in evolving conditions prevalent in modern times. It certainly gave opportunity for the advent of great merchants, full of enterprise and rivalry, chiefly in the arts of peace, thereby making the cultivation of the latter seem quite as attractive and rather more profitable than the pursuit of war, which had formerly chiefly absorbed the ambitions of men. But war in those days was not easily avoided. A disposition to engage in war, with the object of suppressing certain chronic disturbers of the peace, rather from less worthy motives, was something gained, with credit largely due to the growth of the commercial spirit. The monopolies enjoyed by the English merchants of those days no doubt concentrated great wealth in the hands of a few, but in so doing added greatly to the defensive power of the nation; for it is evident that the military supremacy, if not the independence of the Kingdom was for a time largely dependent upon the material prosperity—the wealth and power of the commercial classes. The catastrophe which might have happened to the nation at the time of the Spanish Armada if the merchants had been too feeble to come to the assistance of the government (as they did with nearly twice the number of ships owned or hired by the Queen) may be easily conceived (50). Although the great merchants were in a position to render valuable assistance upon the sea, in time of war, their success in peaceful pursuits, their true field of action, was so great, that it became something in the nature of a spectacle, and this had a tendency to impress their occupation upon the favorable attention of the nation. In London and Bristol, and the seaport towns generally, at this time, there were many individuals not belonging to the strictly commercial classes, who had saved a little money, and were tempted and privileged, with results highly satisfactory to themselves, to take a share in some mercantile venture (51), conducted by one or other of the great merchants. This no doubt contributed somewhat to the growth of a sentiment favorable to peace, for it must be remembered (to quote from Motley, who refers to the close of the 16th,

and early part of the 17th century) that "in Spain, in England and Ireland; in Hungary, Germany, Sweden, and Poland, men wrought, industriously day by day, and year by year, to destroy each other, and efface the products of human industry" (52).

In addition to Alderman Hooke's interest in colonization upon the continent of North America, he appears to have been the prime-mover in an association of Bristol merchants who were promoters of an expedition to discover the North West passage. This effort, although it failed of its main object, resulted in adding "*James Bay*" to the nomenclature of the coast line of North America. The imperfect knowledge of the northern parts of Asia and America, which Europeans of that age possessed, naturally suggested the probability of finding a passage into the Pacific Ocean by way of America on the north-west. King Charles I, for this purpose, sent out a ship of 80 tons burden, in the spring of 1631, manned by twenty men and two boys, under command of Capt. Luke Fox. The attempt was unsuccessful, and Fox returned in the autumn of the same year. Prior to his departure, however, the Bristol merchants, above referred to, had engaged Captain James, a Bristol man, to command an expedition fitted out by their private enterprise, with the same object in view. Their first care was to secure the King's approbation, and Captain James was therefore sent to Sir Thomas Roe, who was one of the superintendents (Sir Thomas Wolshenholm was the other) appointed by the King for the furtherance of the Fox expedition. The letters which passed on this occasion are preserved in the books of the "Society of Merchant Venturers" in Bristol.

The five merchants who initiated this enterprise obtained the coöperation of the Mayor, who was a brother-in-law of Sir Thomas Roe. They soon received the support of the latter, and in due time the fullest encouragement from the King. After the preliminary steps had been taken, Captain James was sent to London with the following letter, which bears this endorsement:

"The company's letter to the Lord Treasurer in behlfe of Capt. James, and to crave his Lordshipp's favour for equall priviledge with others that shall attempt the enterprise."

"To the Right Hoble our very good lord, Richard Lord Weston, lord High Theas^r of England.

"Right Hoble, The Merchants of this cittie, being ambitious to serve his Mat^{tie} and their cuntrye, as also to enlarge trafficque for their future employ-

ment, are willing to sett forth a shipp in the springe of the yeare for the discovery of the North-west passage into the South Sea, under the command and conduct of the bearer captaine Thomas James, a well deserving Gent', very expert in the arte of navigation, valiant and a good commander,—. Thus being confident of your honorable inclination to this our suit, we most humbly take leave and do rest your Honours in all dutifull observance.

"John Tomlinsong, Mayor
"Humfrye Hooke
"John Baker

"Richard Longe
"John Tailor
"Giles Elbridge"

Captain James was introduced to the King, as the following letter indicates.

"The Earle of Danby his letter to Sir John Worstenham, Knights, concerninge his Maties pleasure to speak with the Captains whereby he shall receive grace and encouragement for the undertakings of the voyadge."

"To the Right Worshippfull Sir John Worstenham, Knight.

"Sir, According to your desire I have moved his Matie concerninge Captaine James and the towne of Bristoll for the present enterprize of discoveringe the North-west passage, and likewise for their good indeavor performed in the last warr with Spayne more actively and with better successe than any other port in these parts: where alsoe Captaine James shall receive grace and encouragement from his Maties owne mouth for his worthie undertakinge of the voiadge intended. And Sunday next about nyne of the clocke in the morninge I think the fittest tyme, if you and hee can bee in the presence or privy chamber, I will not faile to meet either of you there to accomplish the effect thereof, God willinge.

"Your very lovinge friend

"Danbye

"St. James Feb. 4, 1630."

Captain James, having been presented, and having submitted his petition, and written to the company to notify them of what he had done, received the following answer:

"Captaine James, Wee have received your letters of the first and second present with the coppie of the petition which you exhibited to his Matie on our behalfe: wee approve well the method thereof and doe rejoyce, that it was so graciously accepted and entertained by the King. . . . Wee pray you forget not to conferr and consult effectually with Sir Thomas Button and any other judicious men whom you can learn have byn formerly ymployed in this discovery, comparinge their mapps and cards with yours, and collectinge all their observations for your better information and satisfaction. Alsoe we think it necessary (if you approve thereof) that you entertayne two or three men before your retorne from London of those which were last ymployed in this enterprize, if any may bee procured on reasonable termes, which you

deem industrious and usefull for us. And we pray you informe yourselfe fully touchinge the season of your departure hence; what extraordinary provission of vituall or anything els is to bee made, and all other necessaries for the voyadge.— Thus desiring you hasten home with all convenient speede, concluding with our hartie salutations, we rest

“Your loveinge frynds

“Humfrie Hooke

“John Taylor

“John Baker

“Giles Elbridge”

“Richard Long

Captain Fox, before referred to, set sail from Depford May 5, 1631. Captain James sailed from Kingsroad May 3, 1631, in the *Henrietta Maria* of 80 tons, with twenty men and two boys. In the course of the summer he fell in with Capt. Fox who was already discouraged, and on his way back. He continued to search the coast in vain the whole summer, and finally, as the cold weather approached, after being several times nearly hemmed in by the ice, from which he barely escaped destruction, he sailed towards the south, and suddenly “took a bold and strange resolution”—landed his men and provisions, sunk the ship in shallow water about a mile from the shore, and passed, what has been justly called “a miserable winter,” on an island in the bay now called after him “James Bay” in latitude 52°. He, no doubt, feared that his patrons would lose courage, and not grant him another opportunity if he should return unsuccessful, and as his heart was in the undertaking, he determined to persevere as long as he could possibly retain the means at his command.

When the ice melted, he raised the ship, and July 2, 1632, set sail and made another effort; but finally, as the season advanced, his stores being nearly exhausted, he was obliged to give up the attempt in despair. Captain James says: “With a sorrowfull heart (God knows) I consented that the helme should bee borne up, and a course shapte for England . . . and on the two and twentieth of October we arrived in the rode of Bristol.”

Captain James, on his return, was sent to London, from whence he wrote the following letter:

“London Nov. 19, 1632.

“To the Wors^{full} Mr. Humfrie Hooke, Alderman in the cittie of Bristoll.

“Sir. Soon after my arrivall in London, I delivered your generall letters to the hon^{bl} personages, to whom they were directed, except the Earle of Danby, who was not in towne. They were received and myself by your

undeserved commendations honourable entertained: and as by experience I have found, they respect the worst of your servants, the more ample to make the appear how much they favor you in particular, and any of the noble minded of the citty in general; in convenient time they presented me to his Mat^{ie}, who accepted of the plot I presented to him of my perigrinations, and with a gracious patience heard me read the briefe of my endeavours; with which the conference by way of question and answers continued about two houres time. His Mat^{ie} seemed to be well contented with my faithfull perserverance in the action, and commanded mee a second time to attend him and give him a further relation, and bringe with me Captaine Fox and Captaine Bruton, which went forth this yeere, the better comparatively to judge of our proceeding. My weake service by your encouragement and bountifull accomodations in my setting forth appeared in all humilitie, so that his Mat^{ie} welcomed me home and was pleased to say it satisfied his expectation. Hee hath commanded me to attend here in London and make an abstract of my journal and perfect my observations, and bring it to him; which I am about and brieflie intend to effect and know his further order. As I am but one of many, and albeit a partie to that which was necessarie to perform the action, I was not forgetful to make known to him the charge you were at, and the speciall kindness you have showed to me: as likewise to many Lords, at whose tables I have been entertained. All which doth the more bind me to remaine your faithful servant

“Thomas James” (53)

“At the commencement of hostilities between the King (Charles I) and parliament, the nation was divided into parties, insomuch that there was scarcely a town but contained different partisans” (54). In Bristol the magistrates at first seemed anxious to remain neutral, if possible, and allow neither of the contending parties to enter the city. The Marquis of Hertford, being sent to the west of England by the King, arrived at Wells late in July 1642, and was there joined by Lord Poulett of Hinton St. George, and his son-in-law Thomas Smith, Esq. (55), of Long Ashton, M. P. for Bridgewater, Sir Ferdinando Gorges of Wraxall, who was Mr. Smith’s step-father, and many other loyal men of Somersetshire. They began raising troops, and sent Sir Ferdinando Gorges and Thomas Smith Esq., to ask permission to bring certain troops of horse into Bristol. This request was refused by Mr. John Lock, the mayor; notwithstanding which, at a meeting of the magistrates of the city held on the 2d of Dec. following, when a party of women to the number of one hundred came to the “Tolzey” (56), headed by Mrs. Aldworth, the then Mayor’s wife, and Lady Rogers, with petitions praying that the parliament

troops might be admitted; the mayor (Mr. Lock's successor in office) at once gave orders to open the gates, and two regiments of parliamentary troop entered the city. This proceeding incensed those members of the corporation who adhered to the cause of Charles I, as well as those inclined to neutrality. As these two elements were largely in the majority, the Mayor, Richard Aldworth, Esq. (57), was summarily removed from his office, and Alderman Hooke appointed mayor in his stead. This marked the second appearance of the latter as mayor of the city. He was the first mayor of Bristol for more than twenty-five years who had been called upon to occupy that office for a second time. Aside from the obvious circumstances in the case, this would seem to show that he was an emergency mayor—the man for the exigency—and indicates I think, that he was looked upon by the members of the corporation as the one most likely, at that critical time, to inspire confidence among the citizens, and to bring order out of the chaos then existing. If this inference is correct, and it probably is, it very clearly illustrates his standing and influence in the city, and presumably his moderation and discretion, although upon these points it may perhaps be said to simply emphasize what is indicated to a certain extent by other evidence. The conflict of opinion in favor respectively of King and Parliament although at fever heat in the city since it had become apparent that a resort to arms was inevitable had not reached a climax until this action was taken by the corporation. The probabilities seem to favor the conclusion that the said act was intended as a rebuke to any manifestation of active partisanship *on either side* on the part of those in control of the city, rather than as simply an indication of the preponderance of Royalist sentiment in the corporation which nevertheless existed.

That the condition of things in the city demanded a man of force and discretion—one likely to command the respect and confidence of both sides—at the head of affairs, is not open to doubt. Mr. Barrett (58), under head of 1642 and the mayoralty of Richard Aldworth says: "The mob having now the rule, the better sort of inhabitants dared not appear in the streets without being grossly insulted by the rebellious rabble, and if they went out of town they were taken up and sent to prison" (59).

On the 19th of February 1642-43 Colonel Fiennes, at the head of five troops of cavalry and five companies of infantry, entered Bristol, and assumed the title of military governor of the city and

castle. On the 27th of the same month Sir Edward Hungerford also came with his forces, and the castle was converted into a garrison for parliament.

This same month (February 1642-43) a conspiracy was formed by some of the inhabitants of the city to open the gates to the King's forces, under the command of Prince Rupert. "On the 7th of March, at night, Prince Rupert, Prince Maurice, and Lord Digby, with 400 cavalry, and 2000 infantry, were to advance to within half a mile of the city on the Gloucestershire side; while the royal adherents of the city engaged to seize Fromgate and Newgate for their admission. The signal was to be the tolling of a bell at St. Nicholas', St. John's, and St. Michael's churches. The royalists were to be distinguished by white tape in their hats, inscribed with the word Charles. According to agreement, about fifty of the conspirators met in arms at the house of Mr. Robert Yeomans, expecting to be joined by a number of butchers from the shambles near St. Nicholas gate."

"Mr. Bouchier was to command the party that was to seize Fromgate, at the tolling of St. John's bell. Then was the bell at St. Michael's on the hill to be tolled, and the royal army immediately to march down to Fromgate and Blackborough's garden, while their friends in the city *broke open the house of Mr. Humphry Hooke, the Mayor, and having killed him and his family, and seized the keys of the city gates*, were to open them to their confederates. Those citizens who did not wear white tape, and other marks of their loyalty, were to be plundered and massacred" (60).

Here would seem to be evidence that the mayor, although a Royalist himself, was pursuing a neutral or non-partisan course, and had therefore become an impediment in the way of the more violent Royalist partisans. He was probably pledged to some such course when he accepted the office, and was certainly so pledged if his appointment, and the removal of his predecessor, were intended as a rebuke to municipal partisanship, as already stated seems probable. He was therefore bound in honor (as it would seem he must have been in any event) to do his best to preserve the order of the city, rather than to encourage or countenance the opposite.

This scheme of the Royalists, which was to be put into execution in the dead of night, was discovered about an hour before its consummation. A citizen, noticing a number of men enter the house

of Mr. Yeomans, had his suspicion aroused, whereupon he notified the guard. The house was immediately surrounded and the plot discovered. Prince Rupert marched towards the city, but hearing no signal from the bells, concluded that the plot had miscarried, and was easily persuaded to retire by a shot from the tower. Yeomans and Bouchier were tried by court-martial, "and sentenced to be hanged, drawn, and quartered, which was put into execution on the 30th of May, in Wine street at the Nag's Head door" (61).

King Charles made every effort to save them and sent a menace to the parliamentary military governor of Bristol, "in which he said if those citizens were put to death, several partisans of the Parliament who were his prisoners should suffer a similar punishment; but Colonel Fiennes, in his answer, pointed out the difference between prisoners of war, and spies or conspirators." The King then wrote a letter to Mr. Hooke, the mayor, and to Mr. William Colston and Mr. Henry Creswick, sheriffs, in which he told them that the execution of those men "would call down the just vengeance of God, and bring perpetual infamy on the city, he therefore willed and commanded them to raise all the power and strength of the city to rescue them" (62). But the royal mandate was disregarded, and the culprits suffered the rigor of martial law. "Indeed," says Corry, "it was unreasonable to suppose that the municipality of Bristol would venture to act in open defiance of the military governor of the city." However this may have been, we find that some fear was manifested by the military authorities upon the subject, and also that the King's command failed to reach the magistrates in time to affect their action, for "Fiennes having intelligence that a letter was coming from the King, kept the gates shut to keep out the messenger, until their intended murders were fully finished" (63).

On the 24th of July 1643, Prince Rupert arrived before the city, with a large army, intending to lay seige to it, but finding the garrison well prepared for such an emergency, he resolved to storm it; this he did in six different places, suffering a repulse with great loss, however, at every point but one, where he managed to effect a breach in the walls. This success was obtained by Colonel Washington, in command of a detachment of three hundred men of the Royalist army. Colonel Washington was first cousin of the grandfather of the hero of American Independence. At this opening the assailants succeeded in entering the city. In

speaking of the contest at this point Seyer says: "The garrison however still kept the walls and the gates; and they drew some cannon into the Marsh (64); they planted one at the head of the Quay, and three at Gyb Taylor, *and one on the top of Alderman Hook's house on the Quay*, and stationed musqueteers in some of the houses on the Quay, by which means they drove the assailants from Sir Ferdinando Gorges' house (65), and from the College-green (66) and College-wall, from which places they had annoyed the garrison on the other side of the river." The partial success which the Royal army met with at this point, resulted in the final capitulation of the city; and when news thereof reached King Charles at Oxford, "he ordered a public thanksgiving on the joyful occasion" (67).

"On the 3rd of August following, the King himself came to Bristol, with Prince Charles, the Duke of York, and several of the nobility. The King lodged at the house of *Alderman Creswick* (Alderman Hooke's son-in-law), and the Prince and Duke at Alderman Holworthy's, which was in the same street directly opposite" (68). Evans says: "During his Majesty's stay in this city, he lodged at the house of Mr. Creswick, in Small-street, the beautiful gothic architecture of which is yet (1816) entire." Seyer, the historian of Bristol, says, on the 3rd of August, 1643, the King, Charles I, arrived "accompanied by his sons Charles, Prince of Wales, and James, Duke of York, attended by Sir Edward Hyde (afterwards Lord Chancellor) at that time Chancellor of the Exchequer, and others of his ministers. Here he made a public entry, and took up his lodgings in Small-street. I am sorry to observe," continues Seyer, "an uncertainty in regard to the house in which he resided. Mr. Barrett says he lodged at Mr. Colston's house; meaning certainly the house *afterwards* belonging to the celebrated Mr. Colston (69), who, in the year 1643, *was only seven years old*. This house is situate nearly in the middle of Small-street, on the north-eastern side. . . . Others say" (here Seyer introduces a communication from the Rev. Jas. Dallaway, F.S.A., the celebrated historian and antiquarian), "that 'the King lodged in Alderman Creswick's house, which is next door above Mr. Colston's, and is the same in which Queen Elizabeth was received in her Progress. The rooms were [and are] (7) remarkable for the curiously carved and pannelled wainscott; and one

of them contains [or did some years ago] (70) the rostrum from whence the recorder, John Glanville, addressed her Majesty.' Perhaps," says Seyer, "both these accounts may be true: the King and his attendants would probably require both these houses for their accommodation." We find, however, in the "Life of Colston," who did not take up his freedom as a burgess and merchant of Bristol until 1683, that "on Sunday, August 6th, 1643, Charles, in his coach of state, in which were also seated his two sons (Prince Charles and the Duke of York) with Sir Edward Hyde, went to the Cathedral from *Alderman Creswicke's* in Small-street. The procession was preceded by his body guard, by Heralds and Pursuivants, in their gorgeous tabards, and the officers of his household; followed by the trumpeters, the mace bearers, the wait players, the officers of the Corporation, in blue silk gowns; the chamberlain with his golden mace, the town clerk in his robes, the sword bearer, with the pearl sword, and wearing the cap of maintenance, the Mayor (Alderman Hooke), walking in his scarlet robes, bareheaded before the carriage, which was followed by the recorder, the Aldermen, and members of the Common-council, also in their scarlet robes, and the chief officers of the army."

"Bristol remained in the King's hands all the next year" (71), but on the 21st of August, 1645, the city was again besieged, this time by Cromwell's troops under Sir Thomas Fairfax; and after a gallant defence "the Prince capitulated and gave up the place, on the 11th of September following" (72). Corry says, "Bristol was an important acquisition to the parliament. According to the account given by Mr. Creswick, the Mayor, to Oliver Cromwell, the garrison consisted of 2500 infantry, 1000 cavalry, and 1500 trained bands and auxiliaries."

As I have spoken of the visit of Charles I to Bristol during this period, it may be well to mention the visit of Oliver Cromwell whose "war beaten visage might have been seen during many days in Small-street. In 1649 he came in splendid state to Bristol, conveyed in a coach drawn by six Flanders mares, and accompanied by a gallant body guard of eighty men, the meanest of whom was a commander or squire, and was entertained here with his wife by Mr. Alderman Jackson" (73).

This gentleman, Alderman Joseph Jackson, was the "son Jackson" mentioned by Alderman Hooke in his will in 1658. He was

second husband (and first cousin) of Alderman Hooke's daughter-in-law Mary (Hele) Hooke, widow of Thomas Hooke, the Alderman's eldest son.

The unfortunate civil contention in the nation, arraying cavalier and Roundhead at this period in hostile camps, was mirrored, as we have seen, in Bristol, as well as elsewhere in the kingdom, by differences more or less pronounced between those in control of the municipality, and even between those connected by family ties. Mayor Richard Aldworth, whose son afterwards married Alderman Hooke's grand-daughter Dorothy Hooke, the Sheriff Joseph Jackson (Mr. Hooke's son-in-law), who was later mayor, and an alderman, were for the Parliament. On the other hand Alderman Humphrey Hooke, Richard Long, William Taylor (slain when the forces of Sir Thomas Fairfax took Prior Hill fort, Sept. 9, 1645), and John Langton, with other members of the corporation including George Hellier, Sheriffs Henry Creswick and William Colston (the two former sons-in-law of Alderman Hooke, and both subsequently filling the offices of mayor and alderman), ex-Sheriff Thomas Hooke, the alderman's eldest son, William Cann, father of Robert Cann (the latter afterwards both mayor and alderman, and another son-in-law of Alderman Hooke), ex-sheriff Yeomans (Robert Cann's uncle, hanged, drawn, and quartered by the Parliamentarians in 1643, as was also George Boucher, son of Alderman Boucher and half brother of John Boucher, then deceased, who was a brother-in-law of Alderman Hooke's son Thomas), and others whose record I have not traced, doubtless the greater number, either endeavored to preserve a neutral attitude, or were active partisans of the King. That a majority of the principal citizens were royalists is asserted by Fiennes the Parliamentary governor of the city in 1642. "The great ones of this towne have been well acquainted with the monopolies, and engrossments of trade, and are therefore Malignants" (74). Mr. Hooke's strong Episcopal tendency is indicated by the bequest in his will to the Episcopal ministers of Bristol, including "Mr. Towgood, Mr. Stanfast, Mr. Williamson, Mr. Bruerton, and Mr. Freeman," who had suffered while the Roundheads held possession of the city. Seyer says: "Fiennes put in Mr. John Tombes of Leominster into the church of All-Saints, instead of Mr. Williamson whom they turned out; and other fanatic preachers they brought into the city, viz, Chaddock, Bacon, Walter, and Simonds, instead of Mr. Standfast,

Mr. Towgood (75) and others." Alderman Hooke and Long, with Mr. Creswick, the Mayor, and others, were removed in 1645 by Sir Thomas Fairfax the general in command of the Parliamentary garrison, "because they were for the King" (76). Seyer says: "Who the others were does not appear, nor who were elected in their stead." William Colston was certainly one of those removed in 1645. Having survived the Restoration, he was replaced by Charles II.

In this connection it may be said that the removal of the Royalists from control in the municipality was no doubt instigated by the Parliament, in order that its own partisans might be substituted, and in that way greater security obtained for the future control of the city by the Parliamentary military forces. Richard Aldworth who had been removed from his Mayoralty by his Royalist associates in 1642 (an act justified by the city charter) was certainly one of those placed "in their stead," for he was made an Alderman of Bristol by Parliamentary ordinance Nov. 1, 1645. These Parliamentary or military acts, both of removal and substitution, were no doubt without precedent, and being subversive of the royal charter under which the city was governed, were in line with the revolution then in progress throughout the nation. The restoration of Charles II, brought a cancellation of the old charter, involving a complete change in the magistracy of the city, probably as the best means of removing those who owed their appointment to Parliament. The new charter, previously referred to, was then issued, and contained the names of the more prominent loyalists of the city who had been selected by the King to fill the Aldermanic office, including those loyalist members of the old corporation, under Charles I, who were not then dead or incapacitated, and all were to hold office as before, "during their natural and respective lives."

Mr. Hooke died two years before the Restoration, but his sons Henry Creswick and Robert Cann, and his grandsons Humphrey Hooke, Thomas Hooke, and William Cann were alive, and were duly remembered by Charles II. Thomas Hooke, the eldest son, was not living, neither was our New England William Hooke, the second son. The same remark applies to John, the third, and to Humphrey, the fourth son. Humphrey Hooke, the grandson, received the honor of knighthood (Royal Oak) (77) Feb. 21, 1661. Robert Cann (son-in-law of Alderman Hooke), received

the same honor April 22, 1662, and "was advanced to a baronetcy on the 13th of Sept. in the same year" (78). The alderman's grandson Thomas Hooke of Flanchford, was created a baronet July 22, 1662. His son-in-law Henry Creswick, and his grandson William Cann were knighted by Charles II, in Bristol, Sept. 5, 1663. And thereafter the house of Sir Henry Creswick and Elizabeth Hooke (his wife) appears, during the reign of Charles II, to have been the place of "lodging and entertainment" for the different members of the Royal family when they visited Bristol.

The honor of knighthood, as we may presume, is usually bestowed upon one who has in some way earned that distinction for himself, while an hereditary title, like baronet, viscount, and the others, may have been acquired by some predecessor, so that the possession of one of the latter class of titles, although indicating a higher rank, is not necessarily so great a mark of individual merit (if that term may be used to express the idea intended), as the former. Of course this distinction is lost when the higher rank is originally bestowed. We have seen that Alderman Hooke's two grandsons, Humphrey Hooke and Thomas Hooke (both children of his eldest son Thomas, then deceased), were honored by Charles II, with titles of "knight of the royal oak," and baronet respectively, but, as it would appear, in contraversion of the rule stated above. These honors appear to have been bestowed upon them in consideration and requital of the services and sufferings, in behalf of the Royalist cause, of their grandfather Alderman Hooke who had died before the Restoration made it possible for Charles II to honor him, they being the only direct available representatives then bearing his name. These grandsons were but thirteen years, and one year old, respectively, when the civil war broke out, and, as it would seem, could have done nothing of themselves to earn the honors they received. These favors would seem to have been bestowed upon them as soon after the restoration as attention could readily be given to the matter. Sir Humphrey was knighted a few months thereafter. Sir Thomas, however, was obliged to wait longer because not of age, he having been but 21 years and 14 days old when created a baronet, the warrant, issued on the 7th of July 1662 (the day he came of age), having apparently been delayed seventeen months after his brother had been knighted to allow him to reach his majority. He was then created High Sheriff of the County of Hants (Hampshire, otherwise Southamp-

ton) but declined. His brother Sir Humphrey Hooke, however, was created High Sheriff of Gloucestershire, and accepted that position.

One other direct representative of Alderman Hooke then bearing his name (his New England grandson William, heir of his second son William Hooke), was living at the Restoration, and was then in Bristol, but his Puritanism was naturally a bar to his preferment at that period. Had it not been, probably none of his American descendants would have been here to show interest in these records. His "stubborn and unruly" adherence to Puritanism I have presumed (as will appear later), and I think correctly.

Although at the risk of wearying the reader upon the subject of receptions to royalty, I think an account, taken from the old MS. Calendars (79), of the reception of Queen Anne in 1613, may be interesting, as it occurred the year following that upon which our American ancestor, William Hooke, was born. It enters more into detail than any of the others, thereby admitting us a little more fully into the life of a period memorable in these family annals, and well illustrates the quaint phraseology of the time.

"On Friday the 4th of June 1613 Queen Anne, daughter of Frederic, King of Denmark and Norway, and sister of Christiern, the now King of these countries, wife of our King James, came from Bath, where she had been for the recovery of her health and for her recreation, to this city, accompanied by the earl of Worcester, who was in the coach with her Grace. The Mayor and Council made such provission for receiving and entertaining of her Majesty as could be accomplished upon so sudden and short warning. Whereupon he caused all the streets where her Majesty should pass through, to be sanded, and all the companies of arts and mysteries, with three bands of trained soldiers to the number of 500, well apparelled and furnished, under the charge of three captains, to be in readiness for the attending and guarding of her Highness through the streets. And so the Maior, Aldermen, Sheriffs and Common-council, all in scarlet gowns, took their horse and rode two by two on foot-cloths, each one attended by a page, and accompanied by the Chiefest Masters of the several trades with their hords, from the Tolsey to Lafford's gate, where they met and received her Majesty whose Heralds went before her, sounding with a trumpet. Whereupon the Maior fell on his knees, and Mr. Lawrence Hide, Esquire, then Recorder of the city, gravely uttered

a brief but very handsome oration to her Majestie; which being ended, the Maior using some gratulatory speeches in few words presented to her Highness a fair purse of sattin, embroidered with two letters for her name, viz, A. R. in which purse were 100 unites of gold, amounting to the summe of 110*li*, as a gift from the Maior and Commonality of this city, which her Majestie most graciously accepted. The Maior and Recorder having taken horse again, the last Common-council-man did ride first; and the Maior with chain of gold about his neck being placed between two gentlemen-ushers, rode bare-headed next before the lord Carie, who rode next before her Majestie's chariot. When they came up Wine-street all the trained soldiers of the city stood along each side of the street, every one according to his ability, having their apparel suitable to their colours, with hats and feathers accordingly, one Company in red hose and white doublets; another in black and white, and the third in white and scarlet, every one by his dress seeming to be a commander, rather than a private soldier. And so the Maior with his brethren and companie brought her Majestie to the house of the Ladie Marques, sometime the house of Sir John Young, Knight, (Mrs. Humphrey Hooke's cousin) no sword being then borne before the Maior; (her Majestie being guarded by the souldiers, as she passed through the streets) and no sound of drumm or gunne being heard, as she passed. But when her Highness was placed and settled in her lodging, the bands of souldiers being all set in good order upon the Kay, they loaded their guns, and by a private notice from the Earl of Worcester, who being at a house on the Kay, held his handkerchief out of a casement, they gave a handsome volley, and immediately thereupon 60 pieces of great ordnaunce were discharged near the Kay. Then the souldiers marched to the Green before the Queen's lodging and fired another volley, her Majestie beholding them forth of her chamber-window, and much commending them. Then they departed leaving an honorable guard at her Majestie's lodgings."

This "handsome volley" must have startled young William Hooke (aged 14 months) from his infantile slumbers, as his father's house was at that time on the "Kay." William's father was doubtless present on this occasion in his scarlet robes as a member of the Common-council, since he was appointed sheriff the following year, and the sheriffs were always selected from that body.

I have spoken of the entertainment of Royalty by Sir Henry Creswick at his house in Small street. We can only imagine the scale upon which these affairs were conducted, the Calendars being silent upon this point; but to illustrate what was customary at ordinary Bristol entertainments, in the absence of Royalty, I take the following from Macaulay:

“Peppys, who visited Bristol eight years after the Restoration (1668), was struck by the splendour of the city. . . . The richest inhabitants exhibited their wealth, not by riding in gilded carriages, but by walking the streets with trains of servants in rich liveries, and keeping tables loaded with good cheer. The pomp of the christenings and burials far exceeded what was seen in any other place in England. The hospitality of the city was widely renowned, and especially the collations with which the sugar refiners regaled their visitors. The repast was dressed in the furnace, and was accompanied by a rich beverage made of the best Spanish wine, and celebrated over the whole Kingdom as Bristol milk.”

“James, Duke of Ormond, Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, came to Bristol with his Duchess August 17, 1664, and lay at Sir Henry Creswicke’s house in Small-street four days: and so departed to Milford haven, and from thence to Ireland” (80).

Macaulay places the income of the Duke of Ormond at £22,000, and the largest in England at that period.

Sir Henry Creswick died in 1668. Buried Oct. 6 (see St. Werburgh’s register). Taylor says: “On October 8th (?), 1668, Sir Henry Creswick, who resided in the house in Small Street, formerly occupied by the *Times and Mirror* Office (their occupancy was after the street had ceased to be a residential quarter), was here (St. Werburgh’s Church) interred. Six Knights attended the funeral: Sir Hugh Smith, Sir John Newton, Sir Humphrey Hooke, Sir Thomas Langton, Sir George Newton, and Sir Robert Cann; but no memorial of him is now discoverable. The same remark applies to the last of these names. (Alderman Hooke’s son-in-law), Sir Robert Cann, who was here buried within an arched recess beneath the south window” (81).

My investigations show that most of the Knights above mentioned, were related in some way, more or less intimately, by marriage or otherwise, to Sir Henry Creswick’s widow. Sir Hugh Smith (grandson of John, 1st Baron Poulett), and Sir Humphrey Hooke, were brothers-in-law; and the latter was nephew of the widow, Lady Elizabeth (Hooke) Creswick. Sir Robert Cann, baronet, was brother-in-law of Lady Creswick, and uncle of Sir

Humphrey Hooke. Sir Thomas Langton's mother, and Sir Humphrey Hooke's mother were sisters, their sons therefore were first cousins. Elizabeth Gunning, sister-in-law of Lady Creswick's niece (Anne Cann, daughter of Cicely Hooke, the younger, and wife of Sir Robert Gunning,—later the wife of Sir Robert Gunning,—later the wife of Sir Dudley North, Commissioner of the Treasury), had married Sir Thomas Langton, who had previously married Hester Cann, the youngest sister of Lady Creswick's brother-in-law, Sir Robert Cann. Sir Thomas Langton's daughter, by his second wife Elizabeth Gunning, was married to Sir William Cann, his first wife's nephew, son of Sir Robert Cann, and nephew of Lady Creswick. The Newtons were of Barr's Court, or Castle, in Bitton, Gloucestershire, adjoining Sir Henry's manor of Hanham Court. Susannah Wharton, first cousin of Sir Humphrey Hooke's wife (Florence Smith), married Sir John Newton of Barr's Court, 3d baronet. His father Sir John, 2d baronet, was probably the one present at the funeral. Susannah Wharton was daughter of Sir Michael Wharton, Knt., of Beverly, in Yorkshire. Sir George Newton was possibly a brother of Sir John, and if so, was son of Thomas Newton, Esq., of Gunwaley, in Lincolnshire. I think, however, that Taylor, or his printer, may have been in error in giving the name Sir George Newton, and that it should have been Sir George Norton, of Abbots-Leygh, Somerset, Knt., at whose house Charles II was sheltered and concealed when escaping in disguise from England.

It seems probable that a strong friendship, and some measure of intimacy, had arisen between Queen Katharine, wife of Charles II, and Alderman Hooke's daughter, Lady Creswick (Elizabeth Hooke). After the death of Sir Henry Creswick (himself styled "friend of Charles II," by some writers of the time, though for what reason is uncertain), the Queen certainly made two, if not more, visits to Bristol, stopping each time at the house of Lady Creswick. Queen Katharine was a sister of the King of Portugal, and the fortress of Tangier in Morocco, a gift from her brother Affonso V, was a part of the dower (82) she brought to Charles II. Lady Creswick's nephew Sir Thomas Hooke (grandson of the Alderman) named his manorial estate in the county of Southampton, where he resided, "Tangier Park," probably out of deference to the regard shown by the Queen for his aunt.

“Queen Katharine came to Bristol July 11, 1674, and was honorably entertained at Sir Henry Creswick’s” (83). And again, “July 20, 1677, Queen Katharine came from Bath to Bristol, guarded by the Earl of Ossory and his troop; and was received by the Mayor and Aldermen in their Scarlet, who did ride two by two in their foote cloathes on horsebacke, accompanied by the rest of the Councill and Chiefe of the cittie unto Lawford’s-gate, where the town Clarke very gravely uttered a learned oration unto her Majestie. And then after the Mayor with all the Majestrates tooke horse again; the last of the Councill did ride foremost; and soe in order till they came to the Mayor, who did ride bare-headed before the coach where the Queen was. And all the way as they came from Lawford’s-gate to Smale-street all the trayned soldiers of the cittie made her Majestie a guard. And after the Mayor and Councill had conducted her Majestie to her lodging, which was at Sir Henry Creswick’s house in Smale-street, all the trayned soldiers gave a volley of shott, and presently after the great guns fired” (84).

Sir Henry’s widow (Elizabeth Hooke) was the mistress of the Small street establishment at that time, and also during the previous visit in 1674, and of course the proper one there to entertain the Queen. Her son Francis was then unmarried, and Sir Henry had died six years before the visit first recorded. Lady Creswick’s daughter Elizabeth, however, was thirty-three years of age in 1677, and only six years younger than the Queen. There were four daughters of Lady Creswick then living.

Sir Henry Creswick’s out of town residence was at his manor of Hanham Court (85), in Bitton, Gloucestershire. “On Wednesday, the 25th of August, 1686, King James came hither (to Bristol), accompanied by George, Prince of Denmark, the Dukes of Beaufort, Somerset, and Grafton, Lord Peterborough, and many other Nobles and great persons of the realm” (86). Seyer says: “It might have been at this time, that the King turned out of the direct road from Bath, and paid a visit to Hanham Court. Mr. Creswick, the owner of that house in 1817, showed a spot of ground where once stood a tree under which his grandfather (Francis Creswick, Sir Henry’s eldest son, and Alderman Hooke’s grandson) entertained King James II (87), as he was informed by Hugh Brain, who lately died at the age of 102, whose

father (88) was then present. . . . The King was received at Lawford's gate . . . with the usual ceremonies. . . . He touched several for the Evil" (89).

Sir Henry Creswick's eldest son and heir, Francis Creswick (90) (mentioned in Alderman Hooke's will), married Mary, sister of John Ridges of London, the latter of whom married a step-daughter of Sir Thomas Gold. In a list of "Marriages in the Faculty office of the Archbishop of London," we find: Francis Creswicke, of Hanham, county Gloucester, Esq., bachelor, 30 (91), and Mary Ridges of St. Bride, London, Spinster, 25, her parents dead. At St. Sepulchre, London, 6 June 1679."

In the Parish Church of Hanham is a stone tablet with this inscription:

"In spe Resurrectionis
Hic jacet Corpus Francisci Creswicke,
Armig. qui obiit 18 Jan. 1732, ætatis suæ 89.
Ac etiam Corpus Mariæ Uxeris ejus ætat. 58."

Mrs. Creswick must have died about the year 1712.

When the rupture occurred between the King and Parliament in 1642, the royalist members of the Long Parliament (92), including Aldermen Humphrey Hooke and Richard Long, who represented Bristol, were excluded from their seats by the "Roundheads," and others called "Recruiters" (93) put in their place. Although these aldermen were undoubtedly Royalists (94) (called by the Roundheads "Delinquents" or "Malignants"), they were classed by their parliamentary associates among those styled "Monopolists." The only monopoly I find specifically stated was the one held by Sir Nicholas Crisp, Knt., "monopoly in copperas." But the Journals of the House of Commons indicate that Aldermen Hooke and Long were believed to possess a monopoly connected in some way as it would appear with the importation of wine.

12th May 1642 "Resolved, upon the Question, That Mr. *Long* and Mr. *Hooke* are no Projectors in this Business of Wine.

Resolved, upon the Question, That Mr. *Long* and Mr. *Hooke* are Beneficiaries, within the Order of the House, in the Project of Wine."

The impost upon wine had probably been farmed out to them by the Crown. A farmer, in such case, is one who, by the payment of a certain sum to the Crown, is authorized to collect the revenue

or customs upon a certain commodity, or who collects the same at a certain rate per cent. In 1594, Mr. Swinnerton was "farmer of the impost for wines." (See reference in Calendar of State Papers.) It was no doubt considered absolutely necessary that all the farmers of the imposts, whose contracts were with the Crown, should be dispossessed of their rights. Revenue from these sources was indispensable to the Parliament, and the right of the Crown to the same was of course deemed to have been forfeited. Aside from other considerations, military necessity would have demanded that the King should be deprived, if possible, of all such sources of revenue.

1149469

On the close of the first of the two civil wars, which ended with the discomfiture of the Royalists, it became necessary for the parliament to obtain all the money possible to meet the army and other expenses, which were then greatly in excess of the ordinary income even in peaceful times. Among a variety of means employed for securing funds, it was decided to sequester the estates of some of the more wealthy Royalists. Mr. Humphrey Hooke was marked for one of the victims. "For helping to defend Bristol against Parliament," he had compounded for his estates, Feb'y. 27, 1647, on the Bristol Articles, although he had then taken the National Covenant and Negative Oath. On the 9th of Aug. 1649, he was fined £669, 10s. 11d., and on the 12th of Dec. following £125 in addition (95). He had doubtless also borne his share of the assessment of £140,000 levied upon the city at the time of its capture in 1645, and the drain upon his purse in helping to defend the city was no doubt considerable (96). Notwithstanding these numerous burdens and exactions an order was finally issued by Parliament in 1650 to confiscate his property and estate (97). This would doubtless have been carried into effect, but for the intervention of Cromwell, who wrote a letter to Parliament on the 20th of June 1650, requesting that an exception be made in Mr. Hooke's favor, and "that he may be preserved from anything of that nature." Although Cromwell does not fully state his reason for this action (98), he intimates in his letter, that it was because of something which occurred at Bristol, at the time of the surrender of that city to the Parliamentary forces in 1645. The Articles of Capitulation, at that time, were signed in Cromwell's presence, and it is possible that he had in mind the fourth clause in said articles, which reads as follows: "That all citizens of Bristol, and

all noblemen, gentlemen, clergymen, and other persons, residing in the said city and suburbs, shall be saved from all plunder and violence,—and shall enjoy those rights and privileges which other subjects enjoy under the protection and obedience of the Parliament.”

Although Cromwell says: “His Excellency, the Lord General Fairfax, and myself gave him (Alderman Hooke) an Engagement under our hands and seals, That he should be secured and protected, by the authority of the Parliament, in the enjoyment of his life, liberty, and estate, as freely as in former times, and as any other person under the obedience of the Parliament, notwithstanding any past acts of hostility, or other thing done by him, in opposition to the Parliament, or assistance of the enemy,” he probably might have said, had he desired to be more specific: “Gave him an engagement, *that he and other citizens of Bristol should be*” etc. Cromwell, however, intimates that Mr. Hooke rendered some service at the time of the surrender, and for this he appears to have considered himself under obligations. It is conceivable, therefore, that Alderman Hooke, at that time, may have been in a position to see that the capture of the city, with a useless sacrifice of life on both sides, was sure to follow a second assault, then already begun,—the first having been partially successful, and the result even then practically determined (99),—that the capture of the city under the second assault, was certain to be followed by a measure of that pillage and destruction, which shortly after, for instance, followed the taking of Basing House; and that, in consequence, he used his influence with Prince Rupert to secure for the city and garrison, before it was too late, the liberal terms which were subsequently granted (100), and, by so doing, impressed Cromwell with having also rendered a valuable service to the assailants. Perhaps he was also a surety for the payment of the £140,000 to save the city from being plundered. He was undoubtedly brought in contact with Cromwell, at that time, in some way, probably as a party to the negotiation of terms. As regards the surrender of the city itself, Mr. Hooke was *certainly not in a position to have done more than advise that step*. Cromwell says: “For something considerable done in order to that end, by Humphrey Hooke, Alderman of that place,” the said “Engagement” was given, or probably, in other words, the fourth clause in the articles was inserted.

In those days (and it is largely so at present), the disposition, under will of the testator, of some part, frequently a large part, of

any considerable estate in England, was liable to be anticipated in various ways; as, for instance, in the form of a system of entail, as applied to certain estates in favor of the eldest son, sometimes in the form of a life estate followed by a series of cross-remainders; and as, in the shape of marriage settlements, in favor of the various children, a modification of the old frank-marriage form. These forms, particularly the latter, if the family were large, left the testator with less, sometimes with nothing but personalty, to dispose of under his will. No probate of a land will was necessary at the time we are considering. "This is still the law in ordinary cases" (Encl. Brit.). This accounts for the fact that many of the wills of early date are largely confined to the disposal of personal estate.

I have stated that the value of money at this period was about five times its present value. To further illustrate the comparative purchasing power of money in those early days, I select the following. From records early in 1600 we may conclude that the "ordinary wages of a workman were a shilling a day" (101), (about 22 cts.). Here is an instance from Redcliff Church records; "Item, paid to John Lambert, for iiij (four) daies worke in paynting the cross—iiij s." Another record from the same church is as follows: "1625, Item, paid William Bishoppes, the organiste, his whole year's wages for playing the organ, £2. 13s. 4d." (about \$12 of our money, reckoning the pound at its former, or exchange value \$4.44 4/9). The following extracts from the vestry accounts of the Church of St. James will be interesting as illustrating the difference between the clerical stipends of the past and the present. "1572, Paid John Wall our minister for his wages a whole year, £8. 0s. 0d." (about \$35.50 of our money). "Paid John Scollett, clerk, a years wages £1, 6s. 8d." (about \$6). In 1586, the minister's wages were £10 (about \$44.50). "Item: paid preacher for 1 gr. sermons 3s. 6d. Paid Mr. Jones, and Mr. Hill for sermons, 3s. 6d." (about 78 cts.). In 1596, the ministers' wages were £12 (about \$53.50). "The salary of the head master (of the Bristol Grammar school, possibly the one William Hooke attended), a clergyman, in 1613, was £6, 13s. 4d. (about \$30) per annum, and the wages of two female servants kept in the house were £1, 6s. 8d. (about \$6) yearly to each" (102).

William Hyde, M. A. Parson of Otham, Kent, in will dated Feb. 1, 1630-1 (28 St. John), says: "And I do from the bottom of my hearte begge & intreate my loving father Sir Lawrence

Hyde, Kt., even for Christ's sake, that he would pay to my poore betrothed wife £40, which I had for her since the time we were contracted, and that he would out of his own purse give her £60 more, whereby she may be able to live as a gentlewoman as shee is." It would seem from this that the income from £100 was supposed to enable a person to support the position of a gentlewoman, or at least that it should be a very material help towards that end.

EXTRACT FROM WILL OF ALDERMAN HUMPHREY HOOKE

Humphrey Hooke the elder of the City of Bristol, merchant, being nearly 78 years old. Will dated 25 June 1658, finished 17 Sept. 1658. Will proved 20 April 1659, by Cicely Hooke, the relict. (Pell 201.)

To the poor of St. Stephens, in Bristol £10. To the armsmen in the Merchants' Almshouse in the Marsh in Bristol £10. To the poor on the Manor of Kings Weston £10. To the poor *in the East Street of Chichester, where I was born*, £10. To the Ministers of God's word in Bristol, Mr. Towgood, Mr. Stanfast, Mr. Williamson, Mr. Bruerton, and Mr. Freeman £3 each. To my daughter Elizabeth Creswick £1200. To my daughter Sarah Hellier £1000. To my grandson Humphrey Hooke £300, and to his son Thomas £100, and £10 to his wife (Florence) in token of his love.

To my grand-daughter Dorothy Aldworth £50. To my grandson Thomas Hooke £200. To my grand-children William and Josias Hooke £40 a piece, *a couple of most stubborn and unruly boys*, and I give to their brother Jacob Hooke £100 *in hope he may prove better*. To my grand-children Mary and Cicely Elbridge £150 a piece, and to Sarah and Giles Elbridge £100 a piece. My will is that the said Giles relinquish his interest in the City scale else this £100 shall go to the three sisters. To my grandson William Cann £50. To my brother Edward Hooke £100. To my sister in law Mrs. Alice Gostlett £100. To Mary Stanlake, Ann Stanlake, and Elizabeth Bickley £10 each. To Bruen Bickley the £18 which he oweth me.

To sons Creswick, Collins, Hellier, Southwood, and Jackson, and grandsons Robert Aldworth, Humphrey and Thomas Hooke, and their sister Mary Hooke £12 each, which I desire them to accept for mourning. To Mr. Henry Jones, Minister of St. Stephen £5 for funeral dues, to his Clerk 40/, and to the Sexton 20/. To the Servants dwelling with me at the time of my decease each £3. To the Bailiffs of my Manor each 40/.

All my lands, houses, store houses, and tenements, in the City of Bristol (except two tenements in Broad Street, and one in Grape Lane) which are settled by conveyance, as well as that house and little Manor of Kings Weston, also Weston St. Lawrence in the parish of Henbury, county of Gloucester, and which I bought of Mrs. Toby Edmonds, to hold to myself for life, and the remainder to heirs of my son Thomas, and my will is that it shall be so.

Likewise my tenements in Lawrence Weston in the tenure of Richard Wookey, settled by conveyance to myself for life, to my wife for life, and

the remainder to heirs of my son Thomas by Mrs. Jackson, and my will is that it should be so.

I give to my said wife all my Manor of Kings Weston, and that farm called Aytons now in the tenure of John Hollen, and the farm called Hardings now in the tenure of William Hunne which I bought of Sir John Wynter K'nt. and those grounds I lately bought of Mr. Walker, for her natural life, and the remainder to my grandson Humphrey Hooke, and the heirs male of his body, and in default of such heirs to the heirs male of me Humphrey Hooke forever.

To my said wife all my Manor of Frampton upon Severn, county Gloucester, and the farm in the said Manor in the tenure of Thomas Ager, for the term of her natural life. The remainder to my grandson Thomas Hooke son of Mrs. Jackson, and to the heirs male of his body, and for want of such heirs to my grandson Humphrey Hooke, and to his heirs male, they and every of them paying the Lord Berkley rent and other dues.

To my grandson Humphrey Hooke my Manors of Elverton also Elberton, and those of Northwick and Redwick, my three quarter parts of the Manor of Frampton Cottrell, county of Gloucester, and also my Manor of Midsomer Norton, county Somerset, and to the heirs male of his body.

To my said wife my two tenements in Broad Street Bristol called the Lamb, which I hold by lease of the Company of Taylors in Bristol and all that ground in Northwick aforesaid, being part of the Butcher's lease containing about 6 acres which I hold of Mr. Sadler for life, for her life if the leases expire not before. Also my tenement in Grape Lane in Bristol in the tenure of widow Badman, and my farm in Northwick and tenement in Redwick both in the tenure of Robert Mansell, and my 4 acres in Butcher's lease, for her life, and the remainder to my grandson Humphrey Hooke.

I appoint my wife sole executrix of this my will, and give her all my goods, chattels, money, plate, jewels, rings, debts, mortgages, adventures at or beyond sea, and all my personal estate whatsoever, she paying my debts, legacies, etc.

My sons in law Henry Creswick and George Hellier, and my grandsons Humphrey and Thomas Hooke to be Overseers.

I give to my grandsons William and Josias Hooke £60 a piece in addition to the £40 already given. *This I do in hope of their amendment.* To Cicely Tily also Binden £10. To my grandson William Hooke a tenement in the Manor of Kings Weston in the tenure of Catherine Stokes, widow, and all the ground (except that acre which is laid to the little house) for his life, after the death, forfeiture or surrender of the said Catherine Stokes. To my grandson Josias Hooke a tenement in Kings Weston in the tenure of John Stephens, and that in the tenure of Jane Hill for his life, after the death, forfeiture or surrender of John Stephens and Jane Hill.

Whereas there is owing to me by the Chamber of Bristol upon two of the City's scales about £550, allowing less than ordinary interesting, and defaulting (deducting) the rent I owe them, besides £100 I lent the county of Somerset by their order, as by their note appeareth, & about £30 owing me upon the Chamberlains seals, all which I do give to the Mayor, Aldermen & Councill of the City, provided they do pay to the Overseers of the Poor

of St. Stephens every week 4/ for bread to be given to the poor of that parish, & 4/ a week for coals to be given to the poor of that parish forever. And for what remaineth I give it to the Hospital of Queen Elizabeth.

I revoke my previous bequest to my grand-daughter Mary Hooke, & bequeath £400 to be paid to her within two years after my decease. I give to my grandson Jacob Hooke my tenement in the Manor of Elverton now in the tenure of widow Freeman for his life, after the death, forfeiture or surrender of the said widow Freeman.

In this will we find Alderman Hooke's American grandsons styled "*a couple of most stubborn and unruly boys.*" I think we have light enough on the subject to understand what prompted this expression. We have seen that Alderman Hooke was an ardent Episcopalian, and we shall presently see that his son William had become identified with Puritanism in New England some eighteen years before the date of this will. We shall also see from the son's letters to Gov. Winthrop (quoted later) that this fact was *displeasing to his father*. The three American grandchildren, William, Josiah, and Jacob Hooke, were of course brought up in the Puritan belief, and amidst Puritan surroundings and influences in the Massachusetts colony. It should be here stated, at the risk of repetition later, that about the year 1650 the boys William and Josiah, being then about fourteen and twelve years old respectively, accompanied their father to England to be introduced to their grandparents, and probably to complete their education; while Jacob, the youngest son, then about ten years of age, remained in New England with his mother, as will appear later by Mrs. Hooke's petitions to the General Court, and the answers thereto. This explains the clause in Alderman Hooke's will, "and I give to their brother Jacob Hooke £100 *in hope he may prove better.*" He had never seen his grandson Jacob. As William Hooke, the father of these boys, died in 1652, it follows that when Alderman Hooke made his will the boys William and Josiah had been under his guardianship about six years, and it seems to me, as the most probable thing conceivable, that he had endeavored during that time to wean them from Puritanism, and induce them to embrace the faith of which he was so strong an adherent, and that he had *not succeeded*, but in this matter had found them "most stubborn and unruly." Josiah seems to have dropped from the scene two years later, when his grandmother made her will, and was possibly dead. But we find that William, the other "stubborn and

unruly" boy returned to Salisbury, in New England, and May 3, 1669, was selling land there granted by the town to his "father Mr. William Hooke," and that *he was still a Puritan*, or at least not averse to that fellowship. If this is not the true explanation of the "stubborn and unruly" clause, it is certainly the most probable interpretation, and will have to answer for want of a better.

When at the Council House in Bristol, in 1891, the Treasurer of the City recalled to my memory the gift of Alderman Hooke to the City of Bristol (as appears by his will) which represented the sums of money due him from the corporation, and the sum due upon the loan he had made to the County of Somerset, with the proviso that the city should pay the interest thereon forever thereafter to the poor of the parish of St. Stephens. The treasurer then stated that but three days before he had drawn his cheque for that year's payment on account of Mr. Hooke's donation. It should be borne in mind that these payments have been going on for nearly two and a half centuries, and for all one can see to the contrary must continue indefinitely. Unfortunately for the poor of St. Stephens', the purchasing power of money at the present time is only about one fifth as much as it was in Mr. Hooke's day, the interest therefore will only go about one fifth as far towards relieving their necessities as it did when the gift was originally made.

As Alderman Hooke was lord of the manors (103) of Kingsweston, Frampton-upon-Severn, Elberton, Northwick, Redwick, Frampton Cotterell, and Midsomer-Norton, I have obtained some information regarding them. I visited Kingsweston (parish of Henbury), and found its beautiful site and approaches all that my fancy had painted. My time was too limited to enable me to visit any of the other manors.

Mathews' *Bristol Guide Book* says: "Kingsweston, about four miles northwest from Bristol, the seat of (the late) Lord de Clifford, has a noble mansion of stone, built by Sir J. Vanburgh. From this house, Kingsweston Inn, and Penpole Hill, are some of the most beautiful prospects imaginable, of the mouth of the Avon, Kingsroad, the Denny Islands, Glamorgan, Monmouth, and Gloucestershire, mouth of the river Wye, and the old and new passages. . . . Kingsweston park is uncommonly beautiful, and the ridge from hence to Blaise castle forms a noble terrace." The same authority says Henbury is "a very pleasant, rural and healthy

village, situate about five miles northwest from Bristol exchange, in which are many good houses and wealthy inhabitants. It has a spacious parish church, which for beauty and internal workmanship is not to be equalled by any country church in these parts."

While speaking of the Roman antiquities at Kingsweston (the site of a Roman encampment), Seyer digresses as follows: "It would be inexcusable, even in this place, to mention Kingsweston-hill, without noticing the uncommon beauty of its prospect. This narrow ridge, about a mile in length, covered with the finest turf, having on one side a view of the Severn and its shore, for twenty or thirty miles upwards, bounded by the highlands of Monmouthshire and Wales, and on the other side a prospect of the whole vale of Gloucester, overlooked by the Cotswold Hills, *will scarcely yield a comparison with any situation in the Kingdom.*" The present mansion, "situated on a fine eminence in a park of nearly five hundred acres extent," was lately purchased by P. J. Miles, Esq., of Leigh Court.

The following information is given by Ralph Bigland, Esq., Garter principal King of Arms.

"This Manor of Weston, now altogether called Kingsweston, was by Henry II, in the first year of his Raigne granted to Robert the sonne of Harding. He conveyed it to Robert this third son (Robertus Filius Roberti, Filii Hardingi) Robert, Lord of Were. It then passed to his son Maurice De Gant, who died 14 Henry III, leaving it to his sister Eve who died 53 Henry III, leaving it to her son Austen De Gurnay, who died 14 Edward I, leaving it to son John De Gurnay, who died 19 Edward I, leaving daughter who married Sir John A. P. Adam, who died 5 Edward II, leaving Sir Thomas A. P. Adam, who in 4 Edward III sold it to Sir Maurice Berkeley, Knt., father of Sir Thomas, father of Sir Maurice, father of Sir Maurice, father of Sir William, father of Sir Richard, father of Sir John, father of Sir Richard Berkeley, who 12 Eliz. sold it to Sir William Wintour, Vice Admiral of England. Sir Edward Wintour was seized of it in 1614, by whom, says Mr. Smythe's manuscripts (104), it was sold to Mr. Humphrey Hooke, Alderman of Bristol (105). His grandson Sir Humphrey Hooke sold it in 1679 to Sir Robert Southwell, Knt., who was lineally descended from Richard Southwell Esq. (106), one of the trustees to the will of Henry VIII, in 1546.

In this family it has since been vested, and is now (1791) the property of the Right Hon. Edward (Southwell) Baron De Clifford." As Sir Humphrey died in 1677, the sale in 1679, I think, must have been made by Sir Humphrey's son Thomas, if then alive, otherwise Sir Hele Hooke, son of Sir Thomas, would seem to have been the one to convey. If Sir Humphrey had been alive in 1679, he probably could not have alienated the property, as he apparently had only a life interest in it (107).

Among the nine persons summoned from the parish of Henbury, and its hamlets, by the Heralds in 1682-3, as given by Bigland, were Sir Samuel Astry, Knt., Sir Robert Southwell, Knt., and Dame (108) Katharine Hooke. The latter may have been widow of Sir Humphrey's son Thomas, if he lived to marry. I cannot otherwise conceive who she was, unless, as is possible, Dame Katharine is a mistake for Dame Florence widow of Sir Humphrey.

A recent guide book gives Elberton, in Gloucestershire, as nine and one half miles from Bristol, with R. C. Lippincott, Esq., as present lord of the manor. "The living is a vicarage worth two hundred and eighty pounds yearly." Regarding Elberton, the following is from Mr. Smythe's manuscripts. "In Domesidie Booke it is written *Eldberton*, where William the Conqueror had five Hides of Land in Demesne. The manor is now the Inheritance of Humphrey Hooke, a merchant of Bristol, who purchased it of Sir Arthur Smythes, Sonne of George Smythes, a Goldsmith (109) of London; who purchased the same of Walter Walsh of Sodbury, Esq. to whom Henry Walsh his Cozen (afterwards slaine in single Combat, by Sir Edward Wyntour) conveyed this and other Manors; which Henry was Sonne of Nicholas Walsh, Sonne of Maurice Walsh (who died in 4th Mariae), Son of Sir John Walsh, Sonne of Sir John Walsh of Olveston." The title came to the latter through the De Gant and De Gournay families, and the Lords Berkeley (110). Mr. Bigland, King of Arms, says: "To Mr. Smythe's 'Accurate Account of the Property of this Parish' it remains only to be added, that the Manorial Estate passed in Dower about the middle of the last Century (17th) with Cecily, Daughter of the above mentioned Humphrey Hooke, to Robert Cann, Bart., and continued in that family till the Death of the last Baronet in 1765. Leaving no Issue, he was succeeded

by his Nephew Robert Cann Jefferies, Esq., who died in 1765, unmarried. His sister who is the Relict of the late Sir Henry Lippencott, Bart., inherited from him."

Frampton-upon-Severn, is described in the guide-books as ten miles south-west from Gloucester; Henry Clifford-Clifford, Esq., being lord of the manor. "Frampton Court is a fine old mansion with a park of about fifty acres." The living is a vicarage, worth eighty-five pounds yearly, with residence and glebeland.

Mr. Bigland says: "The Conqueror gave this Manor, taxed at nine Carncates or Plough-tillages, with other extensive Grants in the Counties of Hereford and Worcester, to his Follower Drago Filius Puntii, or Fitz-Pons, who died without Issue in 1089. He was succeeded by his brother Richard, who settled it on his second son Walter, Lord of Clifford Castle, co. Hereford, the Father of 'Fair Rosamond' Richard Clifford, a younger son of the preceeding obtained it, and to Sir Hugh Clifford his Heir, a Grant of Markets and Fairs was made in 1254, 38 Hen. III which was confirmed in 1311, 4 Edw. II. In that Reign it passed to Sir John Chidiocke, who had married Isabel, Sole Daughter and Heir of Robert Clifford. Catherine Chidiocke was the Wife of Sir John Arundel, of Llanberne, in Cornwall, who died seized of the Manor in 1479, 19 Edw. IV, and bequeathed it to his Son Sir John Arundel, John Arundel Esq. occurs in 1608, who, about 1630, sold it to Humphry Hooke, Alderman of Bristol (111). Sir Humphry Hooke (his grandson) died about the Close of the last Century (17th), leaving three Coheirs, from one of whom the Family of Grove, of Ferns, co. Wilts, derive their Right" (112).

In the above statement, in relation to the Grove family, Mr. Bigland is in error. The Grove family trace their descent from *Alderman* Humphrey Hooke, and not from Sir Humphrey Hooke. The descent comes through one of the daughters of Sir Thomas, brother of Sir Humphrey. Sir Thomas Hooke was certainly the owner of this estate in 1677, as stated in his will of that date, and as by the alderman's will he should have been, and he is the one who "left three co-heirs." Bigland's account therefore should be amended by substituting Sir Thomas for Sir Humphrey Hooke. From Sir Thomas Hooke this estate passed to his son Sir Hele Hooke, and on the death of the latter without surviving issue it passed to Sir Hele's sister Elizabeth Hooke, who married in 1686

Thomas Grove, Esq. (born 1664, living at Martins, Wilts, in 1713), said Elizabeth being "sister and co-heir of Sir Hele Hooke, bart. of Tangier Park, Hants" (*Burke's landed gentry*).

Mr. Bigland says (113): "The Tythings of Northwick, and Redwick, including jointly about 1400 Acres, stretch along the Banks of the Severn. The Chapel is small; of the Architecture of the later Centuries." Rudder (114) says that Redwick is shown in Domesday-book as part of the larger manor of Westbury. Maurice de Gaunt was seized of the manor of Redwick, with markets and fairs, 6 Henry III. John A. P. Adam (sometimes called John de Badenham) levied a fine of the manors of Northwick and Redwick 25 Edw. I. John de Knovill held these manors 13 Edw. II, and Alice, his widow, died seized of Redwick 28 Edw. III. Sir John Walsh died seized of the manors of Redwick and Northwick 38 Henry VIII. They were purchased by Alderman Hooke of Sir Arthur Smythies in 1631, as will appear by the following evidence which I have found in the British Museum.

CHANCERY PROCEEDINGS

H. 16. No. 40—HOOKE vs. SMYTHIES

DATED 4 MAY 1631

"Your Orator Humphrey Hooke of Bristoll, Merchaunte, sheweth that Whereas your Orator about March 5th, and 6th of his now Majestie's reign, for £1300 by your Orator paid to Sir Arthur Smythies of Obden, county Worcester, knight, did on sieking of said Sir Arthur Smythies to sell same, purchase all that Manor of Northwicke and Redwicke, als Radwicke, and other hereditament in Northwicke and Redwicke, Henbury, Almesburie, Olveston and Aust. or anie of them, or elsewhere in county Gloucester to said Manors incident, and other lands of said Sir Arthur Smythies and Dame Jane his wife, or late of George Smythes Esq. deceased, father of said Sir Arthur Smythies, And Whereas your Orator about ffebruary last past, on verie earnest suite of said Sir Arthur Smythies, for £2050 (whereof your Orator hath paid £1400) did purchase of said Sir Arthur Smythies the Manor of Elberton als Elverton in said County, late of said George Smythes Esq. (except the ffarme of Elberton before that time sold to Humphrey Browne, Merchante, also deceased), and Whereas said Sir Arthur Smythies by Indenture dated 30 Marche, 6th of his now Maj., between said Sir Arthur Smythies and Dame Jane, and one Richard Griffith of the one part, and your Orator of the other part, duly executed by liverie and seisin and by a fyne levied between Andrewe Charleton and Richard Long Plaintiffs and said Sir Arthur Smythies and Dame Jane Defendants, the said Manors of Northwicke and Redwicke, and Whereas also said Sir Arthur Smythies by another

Jndenture dated 26 Feb. year aforesaid, between said Sir Arthur Smythies and Dame Jane of one part, and your Orator of the other parte, the said manor of Elberton als Elverton were also sufficientlie conveyed to your Orator, and said Sir Arthur Smythies did declaire solemnly that his said Lady had a jointure in his Manor of Obden and other Lands in Worcester-shire, but not in any of these lands," etc., etc.

Answer of Defendants dated 4 May 1631.

The guide books say: Frampton Cotterell, Gloucestershire, is seven miles from Bristol. George Bengough, Esq., is lord of the manor. The living is a rectory, value five hundred and sixty pounds yearly, with residence, and sixty acres of Glebe land, in the gift of the Duke of Beaufort, and Dr. W. C. Fox, alternately.

Frampton Cotterell or Cotel: In *Domesday*, the Manor taxed five Hides was given by the Conqueror to Walter, Balistarius Regis. His descendants took the name of Cotel. In 1319, John De Willington held it as of the Honour of Wallingford. In 1515, Giles, Baron D'Aubeney, Constable of the Castle of Bristol, held this Manor in fee, and was succeeded by Edward Seymour, Duke of Somerset. It passed to Mr. Humphrey Hooke's ownership about 1640. "The church, dedicated to St. Peter, is a building in the neat Gothic style of the Middle Centuries with a South Aile, and a Tower embattled and pinnaced" (115). The Incumbent, in 1639, was Thomas Davyes, A.B., with Anne Baynham as Patron. After that, until 1667, Edward Batton, M.A., Incumbent, and "Humphrey Hooke, Esq." (Alderman Humphrey Hooke, succeeded by his grandson Sir Humphrey Hooke) Patron. Then Miles Mugglesworth, M.A., until 1671, Incumbent, with Sir Humphrey Hooke as Patron; and, in the latter year, Samuel Alway, Incumbent, with Henry Wasborough (husband of Cicely Elbridge, grand-daughter of Alderman Hooke, and daughter of Giles Elbridge), and John Clements, *pro bae vice*, as Patrons (116).

The guide books state that Midsomer Norton is a parish in the hundred of Chewton, eight and one half miles south-south-west from Bath, in Somersetshire. The living is a vicarage in the gift, at the present time, of Christ Church college, Oxford. The name "Midsomer Norton" is supposed to have derived from the position of the village between two branches of the rivulet Somer.

WILL OF CICELY HOOKE, WIDOW OF ALDERMAN HUMPHREY HOOKE
(NABBS 187)

Cicely Hooke of Bristol, widow. Will dated August 31, 1660. Desires to be buried in the church of St. Stephens, in Bristol, near her late husband Humphrey Hooke, Esq. Bequeaths to her daughter Creswick £1600. And to Anne, daughter of her daughter Creswick, £400; and to the other daughters, Elizabeth, Hester, Florence, and son Francis Creswick each £200. To daughter Hellier £1600, and to her son Thomas Richardson £200, and to her other children, Humphrey and Sarah Hellier, each £200. To her grandchild Mary Peterson £100. To grandchild Cicely Washborrow £100. To grandchild Sarah Elbridge £100. To grandchild *William Hooke* £100. To grandchild Mary Hooke (afterwards Scrope) £500. To grandchild Thomas Hooke £100. To Mary, daughter of grandchild Dorothy Aldworth £50. To grandchild William Cann £100. To Florence, daughter of grandson Humphrey Hooke, £200. To Elizabeth, another of his daughters, £100. To her brother-in-law Mr. Edward Hooke, £100. To sister, Mrs. Alice Gostlete, £100. To sister-in-law Mary Dixon, £10. To kinswoman Cicely Tiley £10. To the poor of Kingsweston £5. To Mr. Brereston, minister of Henbury, £5. To the poor of St. Stephens £5. To Mr. Henry Jones, minister there, £5. Gives her jewels, plate and linen to her two daughters, Elizabeth Creswick and Sarah Hellier. To grandson Thomas Richardson £200, in addition to that already bequeathed. Appoints her grandson Humphrey Hooke, executor, and makes him residuary legatee. Will proved Oct. 17, 1660.

Children of Alderman Humphrey Hooke and Cicely Young.

(The numerals indicate the children of Alderman Hooke, in the order of their birth. The letters, a, b, c, etc., indicate the grandchildren.)

1. Thomas Hooke, eldest son, born in Bristol, April 28, 1608 (St. Stephen's parish reg.). He was appointed sheriff of Bristol in 1634, and was his father's business partner. He married (first wife) "Mary Burrus" (117) (Burrowes) Nov. 6, 1626 (St. Werburgh parish reg.). She was a step-daughter of Alderman Boucher (118), sister of William Burrowes, gentleman, and of Mrs. Joan Langton (mother of Sir Thomas Langton), also half sister of John Boucher, merchant, *youngest* son of alderman Boucher. Thomas Hooke by Mary Burrowes had:

(a) Sir Humphrey Hooke, Knt., high sheriff of Gloucestershire (119). M.P. for Bristol 1661-1678 (120). Born in Bristol Aug. 6, 1629 (St. Stephen's parish reg.). Died Oct. 16, 1677, aged 48. He married Florence (born 1632), eldest daughter of Thomas Smith, Esq. (121), of Long Ashton, Somerset, M.P. for Bridgewater (Long Parl.) by his wife Florence Poulett, daughter of John, 1st Baron Poulett (122) (123) of Hinton St. George (Somerset), and Elizabeth Kenn, daughter of Thomas Kenn of Kenn Court (Somerset), whose wife was Florence Strallenge. Lady Florence Hooke died Sept. 3, 1692, aged 60. (124.) Lady Hooke's father, Thomas Smith, Esq., was only son of Sir Hugh Smith, Knt., and Elizabeth Gorges, sister of Lord Gorges (Sir Edward Gorges, Baron of Dundalk), and was step-son of Sir Ferdinando

Gorges (125). Lady Florence Hooke, through her grandmother Elizabeth Gorges, was a descendant in the 13th generation from Edward I, King of England, and in the 18th from Walter Gifford, Earl of Buckingham in 1084 (126). Sir Hugh Smith of Long Ashton, brother of Lady Florence Hooke, was born April 21, 1632, made K. B. in 1660, and created a baronet by Charles II, May 16, 1661. He died July 28, 1680. A sister, Anne Smith, married Sir John Knight, Sheriff of Bristol in 1682. An aunt, Mary Smith (sister of Thomas Smith, Esq.) married Sir Thomas Smith of Hatherton, baronet, Mayor of Chester in 1622 and had twenty-two children. Lady Florence Hooke's first cousin, Susannah Wharton, was wife of Sir John Newton (127) of Barr's Court, 3d baronet, and mother of Sir Michael Newton of Thorpe and Barr's Court, 4th baronet, whose portrait, together with those of Lord and Lady Poulett hang in the stair case hall of Banner Cross. This Sir Michael married Lady Margaret Coningsby, eldest daughter of Thomas, Earl of Coningsby (by Lady Frances, daughter of Richard, Earl of Ranelagh) created in the lifetime of her father (1716) Baroness and Viscountess Coningsby of Hampton Court, County Hereford. Lady Florence Hooke's first cousin John, 3d Baron Poulett (1665-1680) married, about 1661, Sarah, daughter of Philip (Herbert) 5th Earl of Pembroke. He was father of John, 4th Baron and 1st Earl Poulett, Lord-lieut. of Devon, Prime Minister of England (1710-11), and Steward of the Household. His wife was grand-daughter of Montague, 2d Earl of Lindsey. One of his sons was "Lord Anne," so named by Queen Anne, his godmother. Lady Hooke's aunt Elizabeth (her mother's youngest sister) married William Ashburnham of Ashburnham in Sussex, and was ancestor of the present Earl of Ashburnham. A sister of Lady Florence Hooke's aunt Catherine (Vere) Poulett, daughter of the famous Sir Horatio Vere, Baron of Tilbury, was wife of the second Duke of Buckingham; and another sister was married to Lord Fairfax, the famous Parliamentary General. Although Lord Fairfax and the second Lord Poulett (Lady Hooke's uncle) married sisters, they were on opposite sides during the civil war.

After the restoration of Charles II, in the absence of a standing army, to which at that time the nation was opposed, the organization of regiments of militia (128), in the different counties was undertaken. Sir Humphrey Hooke was made Colonel of a regiment raised in Bristol, as appears by the following entry in the Public Record Office.

Bristol Dec. 1, 1662. Deputy Lieutenants of Bristol to Sec. Bennet. Have made some progress in settling the militia, but cannot proceed for want of commissions for their new foot regiment of ten companies; Sir Humph. Hooke is to be Colonel, and Natl. Cale to be Lieut. Colonel. Will be careful to prevent wicked designs to the disturbance of government.



HINTON ST. GEORGE, THE SEAT OF BARON POULETT: LOOKING EAST



HINTON ST. GEORGE, CREWKERNE

Hinton House, in Somersetshire, dates from the time of Henry VII.
The garden front was designed by Inigo Jones.
The park extends to about six hundred acres.

The following entry has reference to Sir Humphrey Hooke's election as M.P.

Sir Thomas Clifford to Lord Arlington, Whitehall Oct. 6, 1666. The bill for increase of the coin by the mint was committed, but most of the day was taken up in debate about Lord Ossory's (129) election for Bristol, whither a new writ should be issued, or the case examined at the Committee of privileges, and so Sir Hump. Hooke brought in upon the old election. The House inclined to their former judgment given for Lord Ossory, but his friends, not believing it could reflect upon him if the right were determined against him, gave way to the examination which is accordingly ordered.

In a list of disputed elections to Parliament, we find under the head of Bristol:

"1661, Thomas, Earl of Ossory, and John Knight, Esq., were returned by one Indenture, Sir Hump. Hooke and John Knight, Esq., were returned by another Indenture."

"It appearing that Sir Humphrey Hooke, by sealing the return of the Earl of Ossory, had renounced his own return, it was resolved that the Earl ought to sit until the merits of the Election were heard."

"1666, Sept. 22. The Earl of Ossory being summoned to the English Parliament by the Title of Lord Butler of Moor Park, the merits of the Election were referred to a Committee, who reported that Sir Humphrey Hooke was duly Elected, and ordered the Sheriff into custody for a false return."

Sir Humphrey Hooke was lord of the manor of Kingsweston, which he inherited from his grandfather the alderman. By his wife Florence, he had son Humphrey, born Jan. 14, 1661 (St. Stephen's reg.), who died young; son Thomas, who seems not to have survived his father, although he may have done so; daughter Florence, who married Isaac Dymer of Redlands, Westbury-upon-Trim, Gloucestershire, eldest son of John Dymer of Bristol ("1677, June 12. Isaac Dymer (130) and Florence Hooke"—St. Andrews, Clifton, mar. reg.), and daughters Elizabeth (born Apr. 24, 1660—buried Dec. 10, 1662—St. Stephen's reg.), Mary, and Martha Hooke.

Mary (Burrowes) Hooke, wife of the alderman's eldest son Thomas, died in 1630. ("1630, June 17, Marie, the wife of Thomas Hooke"—St. Stephen's burials.) Thomas Hooke then married,

second (about 1633), Mary Hele, daughter of Nicholas Hele, Esq., a son of Sir John Hele of Wembury, in Devon, and a brother of Sir Warwick Hele, and of Sir Francis Hele, and had:

(b) Dorothy Hooke (named for her maternal grandmother, Dorothy Stradling, daughter of Sir Edward Stradling), baptised Feb. 6, 1633-4 (St. Stephen's reg.). She married Robert Aldworth of Lincoln's Inn, barrister, godson of the Bristol merchant for whom he was named, and son of Richard Aldworth who was sheriff of Bristol, 1627, mayor, 1642, and M.P. for Bristol, 1646-53. "1652. Sept. 23. Mr. Robert Aldworth of ye parish of St. John Baptist, and Mrs. Dorothy Hooke of this parish" (St. Werburgh reg. of marriages).

Robert Aldworth, "son of Richard Aldworth of Bristol," gent., matric. Lincoln Coll., Oxford, 6th July 1638, aged 14. (Foster's Mem. Oxon.) Entered at Lincoln's Inn 23 September 1640, and, Nov. 18, 1647, it was ordered that he be "published barrister next moote" (ex-inform. J. Foster). Treasurer 1674. Town clerk of Bristol 1653. M.P. for Bristol 1654-9, and for Devizes 1660.

By wife Dorothy Hooke, he had son Thomas, and daughter Mary, born about 1653, wife of Samuel Phelps of St. Michael, Bassilhan, London, merchant (Allegation Feb. 18, 1679-80). Also daughters Elizabeth, Dorothy, and Cicely.

(c) Mary Hooke, born April 22, 1637, "daughter of Mr. Thomas Hooke and Mary *his 2d wife*" (St. Stephen's reg.). Mary Hooke (c) married Thomas Scrope (131), Esq., merchant of Bristol, and an alderman there in 1687. "1661, October 10. Thomas Scrope and Mary Hooke" (Marriage reg. St. John Baptist, Bristol). He was third, but second surviving son of Col. Adrian Scrope of Wormsley, Oxfordshire, the regicide.

They had sons Thomas (who pre-deceased his father) and John, afterwards of Wormsley, Co. Oxon. The latter was M.P. for Rippon in Yorkshire March 28, 1722; for Bristol Nov. 28, 1727; and in the three succeeding parliaments M.P. for Lyme in Dorsetshire. He had charge of the great seal for a short time in 1710, and was one of the Barons of the Exchequer in Scotland in the reign of Queen Anne, and of George I, but resigned his judgeship to be secretary of the Treasury, and died at that post April 9, 1752. Scrope is characterized by Tindal (cited in Parl. Hist. VIII 1196) as "perhaps the coolest, the most experienced, faithful and sagacious friend the minister (Walpole) had."

Thomas Scrope and Mary Hooke had also daughters, Mary, Elizabeth, Sarah, and Anne, the latter of whom married Mr. Henry Fane, second surviving son of Sir Francis Fane, K. B., by wife Hannah, daughter of John Rushworth (author of the collections).

Will of Thomas Scrope of Bristol, merchant, Dec. 4, 1700. Proved Aug. 1, 1704. (170 Ash.) My daughters Mary, Elizabeth, Ann, and Sarah. My son John Scrope. My daughter Ann Fane (132), and her husband Henry Fane (133). My wife Mary (Hooke) Scrope.

The children of Henry Fane and Anne Scrope were Francis, Thomas (8th Earl of Westmorland, Baron Burgherst), Henry, and Mary.

Francis, the eldest, was M.P. for Taunton (Somerset) January 27, 1727-8, and June 13, 1734; for Petersfield June 25, 1741; for Ilchester Nov. 12, 1747, and died member for Lyme Regis May 28, 1757. In 1728 he was one of his Majesty's council at law, and standing council to the Board of Trade and Plantations, of which board he was afterwards constituted a commissioner.

Thomas, the second son, of Brympton (Somerset), was a merchant of Bristol (1721-62), and M.P. for Lyme Regis from 1753 until he became the 8th Earl of Westmoreland (Baron Burgherst), succeeding John, the 7th Earl, Aug. 26, 1762, being the next male descendant of Sir Francis Fane, third (but second surviving) son of Francis, 1st Earl of Westmoreland. His Lordship married, in 1727 (his 3d half cousin), Elizabeth, daughter of William Swymer (134), Esq., merchant of Bristol, and was succeeded by his son John, 9th Earl, who married Augusta, daughter of Lord Montague Bertie, son of Robert, Duke of Ancaster, by which lady he had John 10th Earl, and daughter Lady Augusta who married William Lowther, eldest son of the Earl of Lonsdale. His Lordship (the 9th Earl) married, second, Lady Susan Gordon, daughter of the Duke of Gordon. This line has remained unbroken to the present Earl, the 13th, who is the only distant English cousin of the American Hookes, that I have traced to the present time.

Henry, the third son, was M.P. for Lyme Regis 1757 and 1774, and died May 31, 1777. He was one of the chief clerks of the Board of Treasury, likewise of the Privy-Council, and a commissioner for the duties on salt. He married, July 17, 1735, *first*, Charlotte, only daughter of Nicholas Rowe, Esq., Poet Laureat. By his *second* wife, Anne Wynn, daughter of the Bishop of Bath

and Wells, he had Mary, mother of Lord Le Despenser. By his *third* wife he had son John, who married Lady Elizabeth Parker, eldest daughter of Thomas, Earl of Macclesfield.

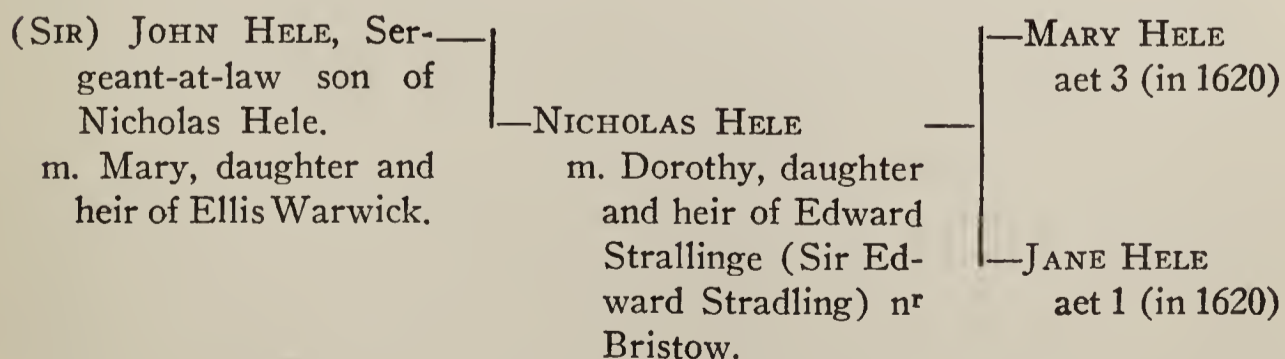
Mary, the daughter, married *first* John Henley, Esq., of Bristol, and *second*, Dr. Samuel Creswick, Dean of Wells, and died at Bath Oct. 1773.

(d) Sir Thomas Hooke of Flanchford, Surrey, and Tangier Park (135), Hants., 1st baronet. Born in Bristol July 8, 1641 (St. Stephen's parish register), son of Thomas Hooke and Mary (Hele). Created a baronet by Charles II, July 22, 1662 (136) (*Burke*). Appointed High Sheriff of the County of Hants (Hampshire, otherwise Southampton) but declined (137). He was a barrister, educated at Oxford University, and Lincoln's Inn (138). He married Elizabeth, daughter of Sir William Thomson (139) of London, alderman, Governor of the East India Company, brother of Robert Thomson (one of the Agamenticus patentees), and uncle of Baron Haversham. Sir Thomas Hooke (140) had son, Sir Hele Hooke, 2d baronet, and three daughters, Elizabeth, Mary, and Ann (141). "He died in 1678 (at the age of 36), and was succeeded by his son Sir Hele Hooke, who resided at Tangier Park, and married Hester Underhill by whom he had no issue to succeed him. Sir Hele Hooke died in Kensington (142) July 12, 1712, when the baronetcy became extinct" (*Burke*). *Burke* fails to state that Sir Hele had a son, but as he pre-deceased his father his statement is substantially correct. In the parish register of Chilton Foliot, Wilts. (baptismal record), is the following entry: "1692 Feb. 20, Edward, son of Sir Hele Hooke, Baronet" (143). Sir Hele Hooke was High Sheriff of Gloucestershire in 1688, 1st of William III. He was also Sheriff of Hampshire the same year.

Part of my information regarding Sir Thomas Hooke is from *Burke*, and therefore at second hand. *Courthope* says: "Sir Thomas Hooke married ——— Hele, daughter of ——— Hele," which is as much at fault as Le Neve's statement that Sir Thomas Hooke was "uncle" of Sir Hele Hooke. Neither *Courthope* nor *Burke* make mention of Sir Thomas Hooke's wife Elizabeth Thomson. *Burke* (*Extinct Baronetage*) says: "Thomas Hooke, Esq., son of Thomas Hooke, Esq., by his wife daughter of Nicholas Hele, Esq., acquired the estate in Flanchford, Surrey, from the Heles, and was created a baronet in 1662." This is not very clear, and leaves me in doubt whether *Burke* means to say that Thomas Hooke, the father, or Thomas Hooke, the son (Sir Thomas) married Mary Hele. He may mean the former, but if he means the latter, and follows the lead of *Courthope*, he is simply *mistaken*. Perhaps *Burke* was in doubt himself or he would hardly have con-

structed such a sentence. Not knowing their respective ages a mistake might readily be made in confusing the two Thomas Hookes, father and son, particularly as the former was married twice. The first and second wives of Thomas Hooke, the father, were both named Mary. His second wife Mary Hele, born in 1617, and twenty-five years of age when her son Sir Thomas Hooke was born, was daughter of the Nicholas Hele who married Dorothy Stradling, daughter of Sir Edward Stradling of Bristol, and had two daughters without other issue. As Sir Thomas was the only son of Thomas Hooke by his *second* wife, he would naturally inherit from the Hele's. Had the authorities (!), who claim that *Sir* Thomas Hooke married Mary Hele, known his age they would probably have avoided error, and have seen how much more probable it was that he inherited the estate in Flanchford from the Heles through his *mother* rather than through his *wife*. He was living at Flanchford, or claimed that estate as his residence, when barely twenty-one years of age (see warrant creating him baronet), and in fact before that time—probably before he entered Lincoln's Inn, as his mother from whom he inherited the estate was certainly deceased in 1658, when he was 17 (vide his grandfather's will), and she probably died before that year. Sir Thomas probably also inherited a portion of the Stradling property. Will of Sir Edward Stradling of Easton in Gordano, Somerset, Esq., dated May 25, 1608. Wife Mary for life, then to Mary Stradling my daughter, then to Dorothy Stradling. Manor of Dixon, County of Monmouth to my daughter Dorothy. Sir Thomas Hooke, in his will, speaks of land, etc., in the County of Monmouth—perhaps it was the manor of Dixon, inherited from his grandmother Dorothy Stradling. He inherited in that way the manor of Frampton-upon-Severn from his grandfather the alderman.

The following is taken from a pedigree of the Hele family at Visitation of Devon in 1620 (144).



Mary (Hele) Hooke, after naming her first child for her mother, appears to have named the second one for herself. Her other daughters, Cicely and Jane Hooke, were doubtless named for her mother-in-law and sister respectively. Nicholas Hele (145) who married Dorothy Stradling was fourth son of Sir John Hele (1565-1608), knt., of Wembury, in Devon, who died June 4, 1608. Sir John Hele had eight sons and two daughters. He was the Sergeant-at-law of whom Prince observes: "He was a most eminent person in his profession, of any other in his days, of his rank, belonging to the long robe: an eminent proof and demonstration whereof is the vast wealth and riches he acquired (with God's blessing) amounting to above one hundred thousand pounds, a great part of which he bestowed in charity to the poor" (*Burke*).

As Sir John was the grandfather of Mrs. Thomas Hooke (Mary Hele), the latter might be expected to choose the law as the proper calling for her son, and that was the profession to which Sir Thomas Hooke was educated.

"Thomas Hooke, gent. Magdalen Coll. Oxford. Matric. 29 Oct. 1657. Student at Lincoln's Inn, 1659, as 2d son of Thomas Hooke of City of Bristol, deceased." (Foster's *Alumni Oxonienses*.)

As Sir Thomas Hooke married Elizabeth, daughter of Sir William Thomson, I give the following from *Le Neve's Knight's Pedigrees* (146).

SIR WILLIAM THOMSON, alderman of London. Knighted at the Hague (by Charles II). Left his eldest son, Sir Samuel Thomson, £1800 per annum, and £40,000 in money. His son spent most of it. m. Elizabeth, dau. and heir of Samuel Warner, alderman of London.	—	SIR. SAMUEL THOMSON, Sheriff of London. Lived at Clapham in Surrey.
	—	ELIZABETH m. Sir Thomas Hooke of Devon, baronet.

Will of Sir Thomas Hooke of Lincoln's Inn, Middlesex, baronet, dated December 1, 1677, proved January 3, 1677-78:

To wife Dame Elizabeth Hooke, the use of household stuff in my house called Tangier Parke, in the County of Southhampton. Lands, etc., in the County of Norfolk, Warwick, Derby, Gloucester, Somerset, and Monmouth, to son Hele Hooke for life. In trust to Sir William Thomson and Robert Thomson to support and preserve certain contingent estates. My three daughters, Elizabeth, Mary, and Ann. Lands and tenements, etc., in Corn-

wall. Stocks in the East India Company, London (147), I give to my son Hele Hooke my study of books, and the diamond ring I usually wear, which I bought of Mr. Winge. Sir William Thomson of London, knight, and the Lady Thomson his wife, father and mother of my said wife. I give to my sister Dorothy Aldworth, fifty pounds. To my niece Mary Aldworth, three hundred pounds, and to my neices, Elizabeth, Dorothy, and Cicely Aldworth, two hundred pounds apiece—all at their days of marriage, or ages of twenty one years. To my sister Mary Scrope, fifty pounds. To my niece Mary Scrope, three hundred pounds, to my nephew Thomas Scrope (148), three hundred pounds, and to my niece Elizabeth Scrope, two hundred pounds, and to my sister Scrope's other two youngest daughters (Anne and Sarah), two hundred pounds apiece. I make and appoint the said Sir William Thomson, and Robert Thomson, Esq., brother of said Sir William, Executors, etc. My Manor of Frampton-upon-Severne, Glouc. To my nephew Thomas Aldworth, one hundred pounds at sixteen. I give to my brother Jackson, twenty pounds to mourn. To my sister Alford, twenty pounds to mourn, and to Col. Alford, her husband, ten pounds to mourn. To Dr. Goodwin, Dr. Owen, and Mr. Collins (149), two hundred pounds to dispose of as they shall see good. To my cousin (150) (his sister, Dorothy Aldworth's nephew) Michael Pindar (151) twenty pounds. To my sister Aldworth, one hundred pounds, for her tenderness to me in my sickness (Reeve, 4).

(e) Jane Hooke, born Aug. 4, 1643 (St. Stephen's reg.). Probably died before Alderman Hooke made his will in 1658.

Thomas Hooke, the alderman's eldest son, died in 1643, at the age of 35 (buried Sept. 5, 1643—St. Stephen's reg.), and his widow Mary (Hele) Hooke (who was 26 years of age in 1643), four years later, married her first cousin Joseph Jackson, Esq., of Sneyd Park, Gloucestershire, son of Nicholas Jackson and Mary Stradling. Joseph Jackson, by Mary (Hele) Hooke had "only son and heir" (152), Joseph Jackson, who was the (half) "brother Jackson" mentioned in will of Sir Thomas Hooke. It will be recalled that Alderman Hooke, in his will, says, "remainder to the heirs of my son Thomas by Mrs. Jackson" (Mary Hele). I find the following in *Rudder's Gloucestershire*:

Sneyd Park "was purchased of Sir Ralph Sadler's (153) son by Joseph Jackson, ancestor of the present (Dec. 1, 1778) owner. He was 5th son of Nicholas Jackson by ———, daughter of Sir Edward Stradling, knt. (She *must* have been *Mary* Stradling, as Mary and Dorothy were the only children.) He married Mary, daughter of ——— Hele, of Devonshire, Esq. (his 1st cousin Mary (Hele) Hooke, daughter of Nicholas Hele and Dorothy Stradling, and widow of Thomas Hooke), and built Sneyd Park house, as appears by his arms over the entrance impaling those of

Hele, viz: A bend lozengy ermine." Joseph Jackson "only son and heir" (*Ibid.*) of this Joseph comes next (the half brother of Sir Thomas Hooke—"my brother Jackson"), and then Nicholas Jackson (son of the preceding), who married Anne Cann, daughter of Sir Thomas Cann, knt., half brother of Sir Thomas Hooke's 1st cousin Sir William Cann, baronet, and son of Sir Robert Cann by his second wife.

After amplifying *Rudder's* material, and adapting it to my purpose, I was surprised to find, upon investigating original records, that this Joseph Jackson, of Sneyd Park, who married Mary (Hele) Hooke (the "son Jackson" mentioned in Alderman Hooke's will) was the Joseph Jackson so prominent as alderman of St. Werburgh parish, Bristol, mayor in 1651, M.P. 1659, and master (four terms beginning with 1647) of the Society of Merchant Venturers, whose magnificent full length life size portrait by Vandyke (in which he is shown resplendent in silk, satin, and velvet) still adorns the walls of the Merchants' Hall (154) in Bristol. The following entry is in St. Werburgh's parish registry: "1647, Mr. Joseph Jackson, Alderman, and Mrs. Marie Hooke, were married the 12 of August." The next year this entry appears in the registry of marriages: "1648. Oct. 16. Mr. Robert Yates of the parish of Christ Church, and Mrs. Anne Jackson, daughter of Mr. Joseph Jackson, Alderman of this parish." Later appears the following: "1653. Nov. —. Joseph, the son of Mr. Joseph Jackson, alderman, and Mary his wife, baptised." This was Sir Thomas Hooke's half "brother Jackson." Many previous entries appear of the children of Joseph Jackson, and Anne *his first wife*. Alderman Joseph Jackson, who survived his second wife, died in 1661. He was born in 1611, and lived in Small St. St. Werburgh burials: "1661. Jan. 17. Mr. Joseph Jackson, alderman of this parish."

Alderman Joseph Jackson, by wife Mary (Hele) Hooke, had also daughter Sarah, who married John Alford, Esq., M.P. for Midhurst 1679-81; for Bamber 1688-89. He was of Offington, Sussex (son of Sir Edward Alford) (155), born Oct 1, 1645, and died May 16, 1691 (buried at Broadwater), leaving issue by his wife Sarah, who died Jan. 22, 1734, aged 86. It will be recalled that Sir Thomas Hooke, in his will in 1677, speaks of Colonel Alford "husband of my sister Alford." She was sister of "brother Jackson," and half sister of Sir Thomas Hooke.

London marriage license (*Foster*): "John Alford of St. Andrews, Holborn, Esq., 21 and upwards, and Mrs. Sarah Jackson of same, spinster, ab. 17, her parents dead, consent of her uncle and guardian Philip Jackson, at St. Martins-in-the Fields, Dec. 4, 1667."

Sarah Jackson appears to have been two or three years older than her brother Joseph. Her uncle Philip Jackson was appointed overseer in the will of his brother Alderman Joseph Jackson.

Items from will of Joseph Jackson of Bristol, merchant, 1658, with six codicils 1658-61: "Having an interest to goe towards Oxford." Son in law Thomas Earle, Grandson Giles Earle, Brothers Phillip, Miles (Mayor 1649), and John Jackson. To Mary (afterwards Scrope) and Thomas Hooke (Sir Thomas) £10 apiece to buy piece of plate. To Mother Heele £5. To nurse (no name) £4 a yeare for care she had of my sonne Joseph. To daughter Sarah £2000. To sonne Joseph Jackson £2000, and land in Nicholas st., bought of Mr. Richard Jones; land called Broad Park (alias Sneyd Park), bought of Mr. Sadler; lands in the fforest, bought of Mr. Walter Ellis; my dwelling, and the house adjoining with the black Bay, and other Tenements I hold of the Citty by lease in Nicholas st. To son Earle house in Small st. I hold of George Carne. To daughter Sarah my interest in Barton Regs: etc. Sonns in law Robert Yeate, Thomas Earle, and Robert Aldworth, executors in trust, and to each £20. Brother Phillip Jackson, overseer. To Mary and Thomas Hooke £10 appece more. To Thomas Scrope £10. "Children to be kept from the ffashions of the world, especially gaudy apparell and naked necks" (Great Orph. Bk. 11, 214-220) (156).

I endeavored to get a copy of Vandyke's portrait of Alderman Jackson but did not succeed. Those who desire, however, can get permission to see the original. When wearing his robes of office, it may be assumed that Alderman Hooke, on state occasions, was dressed in a costume somewhat similar to that worn by his son-in-law, as shown in the Vandyke picture. In any event we have here a representation of the Alderman in scarlet ermine robe. The dress of Alderman Jackson, although in the fashion of the day, was probably not considered very rich or elaborate for the times, in fact we may safely conclude, I think, that it was less so than was ordinarily the case with people in his position, since only a few years later he expressly inveighed in his will against extravagance

in that direction, and furthermore there are evidences in other portraits of a much grander display in the matter of personal adornment at that period. Doubtless there was ample occasion for Alderman Jackson's protest. From evidences furnished by the chronicle of the time we find that the nabobs or rich merchants of the town were inclined to extravagance in apparel, and were followed about the streets by six or eight footmen or flunkies whose costumes were but little less elaborate than those of their masters. Rich silks, satins, laces, and jewels, were showered upon the wives and daughters of the wealthy. It was a reaction from this prevalent ostentation and extravagance that found expression in many of the Puritan rules and regulations in regard to dress, and as Alderman Jackson is known to have affiliated with the Cromwellian or Roundheads, he may have been in sympathy with them in the subject of personal adornment. House furnishings, as well as dress, had been growing in extravagance from the time of Queen Mary. "In a variety of inventories of furniture in gentlemen's country houses in the reign of Mary, I find the hangings of beds—not of state beds, but beds for common use—to have been of blue or crimson velvet; the window curtains of satin, and, in fact, everything except the washing apparatus, of which there is little or no mention, to have been similarly gorgeous" (*Froude, vide State Papers, Mary, MS. Domestic*).

2. Cicely Hooke, dau. of Alderman Humphrey Hooke, born May 23, 1609 (St. Stephen's parish reg.). She probably died before 1620.

3. Joan Hooke, born Nov. 18, 1610. Died the following month. Buried "1610. Dec. 31. Joane the Daughter of Humfry Hooke" (St. Stephen's parish reg.).

4. William Hooke, second son of Alderman Hooke, born Apr. 8, 1612 (St. Stephen's reg.). He was a patentee, with his father, brother, and brother-in-law, under the Agamenticus (York, Maine) patent of Dec. 2, 1631. Governor of New Somersetshire (later the Province of Maine), 1638-40. Appointed by Sir Ferdinando Gorges one of his commissioners for government of the Province of Maine in 1639. Removed to Salisbury (Mass. Bay Colony) in July 1640. Deputy to the General Court from Salisbury, 1643 and 1647. The "Godly Gentlemen" mentioned by Gov. Winthrop. He returned to Bristol in 1650, and died there in 1652, aged 40. ("1652, Julie 8, Mr. William Hooke"—St. Stephen's burials.) He was progenitor of the family in America. Mr. William Hooke married, in Agamenticus (now York, Maine), about 1635, Eleanor (Knight?—formerly of Bristol), widow of Lieut. Colonel Walter Norton who was killed by the Pequot Indians in

1633. For further reference to William Hooke, and for his children and descendents, see American branch of this family record in this volume.

5. Fortune Hooke, born Aug. 11, 1614 (St. Stephen's reg.). She probably married either—Southwood, or—Collins, sons mentioned by the alderman in his will. There appears to be no record of either marriage in the Bristol parish registers.

6. Martha Hooke, born July 20, 1615. Died in 1621. Buried "Aug. 9, 1621, Martha daughter of Humfrie Hooke" (St. Stephen's reg.).

7. Mary Hooke, born Oct. 27, 1616 (St. Stephen's reg.). Married Apr. 30, 1635, Mr. Giles Elbridge of Bristol, merchant (St. Stephen's reg.). Giles Elbridge was son of William Elbridge of the city of Gloucester, apothecary (157). When he married Mary Hooke he was a widower with six children (Robert, John, Thomas, Aldworth, Elizabeth, and Martha), having previously married Elizabeth, daughter of John Aldworth (158), and niece of Robert Aldworth, merchant and mayor of Bristol in 1609. Robert Aldworth, who was Elbridge's partner, made the latter his heir (1634), leaving him his entire estate which is believed to have been very large. Giles Elbridge was sheriff of Bristol in 1629, under the first mayoralty of Humphrey Hooke. The children of Giles Elbridge and Mary Hooke were:

(a) Mary Elbridge, born about 1636 (159), and died Nov. 30, 1637. (See Aldworth monument in St. Peter's church.)

(b) Giles Elbridge (Alderman Hooke's grandson), who was certainly living in 1658, fifteen years after the death of his father.

(c) Cicely Elbridge, born 1641. Married Mr. Henry Wasborrow Aug. 20, 1660. (St. Michael's reg. See also will of Cicely Hooke, the mother.) He was son and heir of Richard, who died 18th Feb. 3d Charles I, the latter being son and heir of Thomas who died at Henbury 5th Apr. 5th James I. Henry Wasborrow died in 1679, after which his widow married John Lamb, Esq., of Clifton.

John Lamb of Clifton, co. Glouc. ae. 44 in 1683, married (2d wife) Cecelie, daughter of ——— Elbridge of Bristol, merchant, and widow of Henry Wasborrow of Pen Park, co. Glouc. (Lamb ped., in Vis. of Glouc. 1682-83).

In church of Henbury, Gloucestershire. In south aisle, inscription on flat stone: "Body of Henry Wasborrow, of Pen Park, parish of Westbury, died July 23, 1679, aged 57."

Next stone: "Here lies the body of Cicely Elbridge, wife of the aforesaid Henry Wasboro, and late wife of John Lamb, Esq., who departed this life June 13, 1693, aged 52."

(d) Mary Elbridge, who probably married ——— Peterson. (See will of the alderman's widow.)

(e) Sarah Elbridge, who was living in 1660.

WILL OF GILES ELBRIDGE OF BRISTOL (160)

Vicesimo quarto ffeb. 1643. Giles Elbridge Mercat^t sanae mentis condit^t Test^m Vizt his body to be laid in St. Peters Croude appointed to that purpose Sonne John Executor.

To Thomas and — } that the mones to them given att age of 21 yeares by
Aldworth his sonnes } their unkles John and ffrauncis Aldworth 400[£] a peece.

To Martha and Elizabeth his daughters by his former wife 400[£] vt. supra a peece within sixe moneths next after his decease.

To his wife and 4 children by her 3000[£]i which he hath entred into by a Statute-merchant (161) to her father Hooke.

Item, to John his sonne and to his heires and assignes forever, the sugar house, the Tenem^t late in the tenure of Georg Payne in St. Peters Church-yard Bristoll, and his ffarme of Natton (sic.—sed qu. Yatton, which is near Bristol) with the apptennces. Habendum to him his heires and assignes forever.

Daughter of my Sonne Robert 50[£]i in monie to be paid at age of 18 yeares in full of all demunds. The rest of his estate êt (162) to John. G: Elb:

Read, published, acknowledged and subscribed by the said Giles Elbridge the 20th (sic) day of ffeb. 1643 stilo Anglicane (sic) in the p^r sence of Thomas Colston, Nath. Cale. Rowland Searchfeld, Hum: Yeamans.

Copia vera concordand cum originali, vera collatione inde fca decimo quinto die Martij An^o Dⁿⁱ 1643 stilo et p^{me} (sie) Gulielmus Walker, Willmus Lane, No^{rium} pub^{cum} (*Council House, Bristol—Register Book of Wills II fo 93*).

8. Elizabeth Hooke, born Dec. 6, 1617 (*St. Stephen's reg.*) and married Dec. 30, 1639 Sir Henry Creswick of Bristol, knt., lord of the manor of Hanham Court in Bilton, Gloucestershire. Sir Henry was sheriff of Bristol in 1643 under the second mayoralty of Humphrey Hooke, and was mayor in 1660. He was son of Alderman Francis Creswick. and was born in 1615. ("1615. Dec. 11. Henry, son of Francis Creswick, Churchwarden, Bapt."—*St. Werburgh reg.*) They had sons Francis, baptised May 2, 1645 (*St. Erwen's reg.*), and Humphrey, aet. 22, A.D. 1672 (Le Neve's knt. peds.), and four daughters.

Will of Sir Henry Creswick of Bristol, Knight, dated Nov. 4, 1667, proved Feb. 1, 1668-9 by his son Francis Creswick (14 Coke.) Manor of Hanham Abbots, co. Glouc. My wife Elizabeth. My children's Legacies from their grandmother Cicely Hooke. My daughters Ann, Elizabeth, Florence Creswick, and Hester Creswick. My brothers Samuel, John, and Joseph. My brother-in-law Richard Davis. My Cousin (nephew) John Hellier (son of Alderman Hellier, and grandson of Alderman Hooke). Lands in Bitton, Saltford, etc. My cousin (nephew by marriage) Henry Jones, Minister (probably husband of his niece Ann Creswick, and father of Ann Jones afterwards wife of Alderman Hooke's grandson "Humphrey Hellier, of Iwood, Congresbury, Somerset, Gent.")

9. John Hooke, born Dec. 6, 1618 (*St. Stephen's reg.*). Died infant. Buried "1618. Dec. 8. John, the son of Humphrie Hooke" (*St. Stephen's reg.*).

10. Cicely Hooke, born Sept. 3, 1620 (St. Stephen's reg.). Married Sir Robert Cann of Compton Green, Knight and baronet (St. Stephen's reg. for marriage license July 17, 1642). Sir Robert was created a baronet Sept. 13, 1662. Baronetcy became extinct July 20, 1765 (*Burke*). He was son of William Cann, Esq., mayor of Bristol in 1648, by Margaret, sister of Robert Yeomans, Esq. Sir Robert was mayor of Bristol in 1662, and 1675, and its representative in Parliament in 1678. He was High Sheriff of Gloucestershire in 1670, died Nov. 1685, and was succeeded by his son Sir William Cann.

Sir Robert Cann, by wife Cicely Hooke had:

(a) Sir William Cann, 2d baronet, born April 13, 1643 (St. Stephen's reg.), who married Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Thomas Langton. Sir William died in 1698. Will of Sir William Cann, knt. and baronet, July 24, 1697. Proved Oct. 21, 1698. To be buried at St. Werburgh's at night. Manor of Brean, Somerset. House in Brislington, and in Corn street, Bristol. Father Sir Robert Cann, knt. and baronet. Son William (under 18). Daughters Elizabeth, Cecilie, and Margaret. My aunt Sarah. (Probably Mrs. George Hellier.)

"Sir Robert Cann, by wife Cicely Hooke (had also) daughter (b) Anne Cann" (*Burke*). The latter married first Sir Robert Gunning (163), of Cold Ashton, Somerset, knt., who died in 1679 (Adm. Nov. 3, 1679 "by his relict Lady Anne Goning"). She was probably named for her father's only (at that time) sister Anne Cann (164). She married, second, Sir Dudley North, knt., merchant, alderman, and sheriff of London, and Commissioner of the Treasury under Charles II. Sir Dudley North was the younger brother of Charles, Lord North and Gray, and of the famous Sir Francis North, Baron Guilford, and Lord Keeper of the Great Seal under the last two Stuarts. As Lady Gunning was Alderman Hooke's grand-daughter, the following extract from "*English Merchants*," by Mr. H. R. Fox Bourne, may be interesting.

In 1682, just before Sir Dudley North accepted office under Charles II as Sheriff of London, "he had fallen in love with Lady Gunning, a widow lady, very beautiful and rich, the daughter of Sir Robert Cann, a morose old merchant of Bristol, as his brother testified. There was some hinderance to the match, through the old gentleman's anxiety to secure a large settlement for his daughter. When his consent was asked, he required that North should purchase and secure to the lady an estate worth £3000 or £4000 a year. The merchant replied that he could not spare

so much capital from his business, but that he would make a settlement of £20,000. To that he received a brief reply: 'Sir—My answer to your first letter is an answer to your second. Your humble servant, R. C.' His rejoinder was as brief: 'Sir,—I perceive you like neither me nor my business. Your humble servant, D. N.' But Dudley North did like his business. He therefore addressed himself to the daughter, and with such effect that she consented to marry him without her father's leave. The old Knight, her father, it is added, came at last to be proud of his son; for, when the first visit was paid to Bristol, Mr. North, to humour the vanity of that city and people, put himself into a splendid equipage. And the old man in his own house often said to him, 'come son, let us go out and shine'—that is, walk about the streets with six footmen in rich liveries attending. . . . Soon after his marriage Sir Dudley North left his house in Basinghall street for a much larger one at the back of the Goldsmiths' Hall. In furnishing the house he spent at least £4000, and his suite of reception-rooms was one of the wonders of the day. Sir Dudley North's mode of life, in these last years was minutely described by his brother. 'His domestic methods were always reasonable, but towards his lady superlatively obliging. He was absent from her as little as he could, and that was being abroad; but at home they were seldom asunder. When he had his great house, a little room near his chamber, which they called a dressing room, was sequestered for the accommodation of both of them. She had her implements, and he his books of account; and having fixed a table and a desk, all his counting house business was done there. There also he read such books as pleased him, and, though he was a kind of a dunce at school, in his manhood he recovered so much Latin as to make him take pleasure in the best classics'. . . . North travelled much in Summer. He went frequently to Bristol and the neighborhood, where lay his wife's property; and after the death of his brother, the Lord Keeper Guildford, he was often at his house at Wroxton, there fulfilling his trust as guardian of the young Lord Guildford," grandfather of Frederick, Lord North, second Earl of Guildford, Prime Minister of England, during the American War of Independence (165). Sir Dudley North's son, Dudley North, Esq., of Glemham, Suffolk (great-grandson of Alderman Hooke), married Catherine, daughter of Elihu Yale, one of the governors of the East India Co., and had son Dudley North, Esq., who married Barbara Herbert, sister of the Earl of

Pembroke (Wotton's English Baronetage). Elihu Yale was the principal foreign donor to Yale College at New Haven, and in his honor that institution was named.

11. Humphrey Hooke, born June 7, 1622 (St. Stephen's reg.). Died the same year. Buried "1622. Aug. 5. Humfrie the Sonne of Humfrie Hooke" (St. Stephen's reg.).

12. Martha Hooke, born Nov. 14, 1624 (St. Stephen's reg.). Probably married either ——— Southwood, or ——— Collins (sons mentioned in the Alderman's will).

13. Sarah Hooke, born March 2, 1626 (St. Stephen's reg.). Married Aug. 11, 1646 "Mr. Thomas Richchesonn" (Richardson), merchant of Bristol (St. Stephen's reg.) by whom she had son Thomas Richardson (166), born 1647 (mentioned in will of Cicely Hooke, 1660). She married, second (about 1649) Alderman George Hellier of Bristol or his son George, it is a little uncertain which, by whom she had sons John (167) and Humphrey Hellier (168), and daughter Sarah. Alderman George Hellier was Sheriff of Bristol in 1638, and Mayor in 1653. He died Apr. 21, 1656. By his first wife Eleanor ———, who died Aug. 28, 1643, he had 6 sons and 8 daughters. As alderman he represented the parish of St. Thomas.

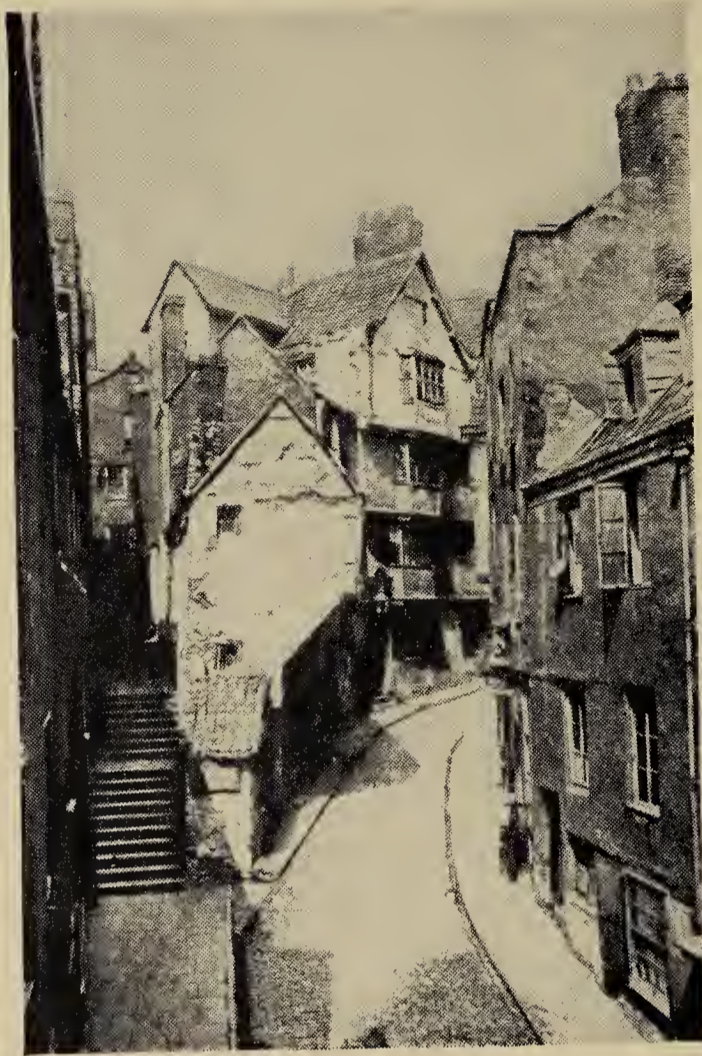
Titles seem to have been fairly well distributed among the lineal descendants of Alderman Hooke, considering the comparatively few male representatives who reached maturity in the second and third generations. There were no titles in the first generation as he and his sons died under the Commonwealth, before the restoration of Charles II. To recapitulate as concisely as possible, the list of titles for the first few generations, so far as I have noticed, is as follows: Among his grandchildren I find one knight, Sir Humphrey Hooke, and two baronets, Sir Thomas Hooke and Sir William Cann. Among his great-grandchildren I find two baronets, Sir Hele Hooke and Sir William Cann; and one generation later an earl (Westmorland).

Several of his lineal descendants were married to those who bore titles, or to members of titled families. The wife of his son Thomas, had for grandfathers, Sir John Hele and Sir Edward Stradling, and for uncles, Sir Warwick Hele and Sir Francis Hele. One daughter (Elizabeth Hooke) married Sir Henry Creswick, knight. Another daughter (Cicely Hooke) married Sir Robert Cann, knight and baronet. A grand-daughter (Anne Cann) married two knights, Sir Robert Gunning, and Sir Dudley North—the latter being brother of Lord North and Gray, and of Lord Guildford, the great-grandfather of Lord North, Prime Minister of England during the American war of Independence.

A son of Sir Dudley North (a lineal descendant of Alderman Hooke) married a daughter of Elihu Yale for whom Yale College was named. He was governor of the East India Company. The wife of one grandson (Sir Humphrey Hooke) was a granddaughter of Sir Hugh Smith, knight, grandniece of Baron Dundalk (Lord Gorges), sister of Sir Hugh Smith, baronet, and (on the maternal side) grand-daughter of Baron Poulett. She was a first cousin of Lady Newton, wife of Sir John Newton of Barr's Court, third baronet, who by his first wife was grandfather of Thomas Coke, Earl of Leicester. Lady Hooke's uncle, the second Baron Poulett, was married to a daughter of the famous Sir Horatio Vere, Baron of Tilbury, and was therefore brother-in-law of the Duke of Buckingham, and of the celebrated parliamentary general Lord Fairfax. An aunt of Lady Hooke (Elizabeth Poulett) married Wm. Ashburnham, of Ashburnham in Sussex and was ancestor of the present Earle of Ashburnham. Lady Hooke's first cousin, the third Baron Poulett, who married a sister of the Earl of Pembroke, was father of Earl Poulett, Prime Minister of England, whose wife was a grand-daughter of Montague, second Earl of Lindsay. Lady Newton, the first cousin above mentioned, (Susanna Wharton), was mother of Sir Michael Newton, baronet, who married the Baroness and Viscountess Coningsby of Hampton Court, daughter of the Earl of Coningsby, and on the maternal side, grand-daughter of the Earl of Raneleigh. A grandson (Sir Thomas Hooke) married a daughter of Sir William Thomson, uncle of Baron Haversham. A grandson (Sir William Cann) married a daughter of Sir Thomas Langton. A great grand-daughter (Anne Scrope) married a son of Sir Francis Fane, and was mother of the 8th Earl of Westmoreland. A great grand-daughter (Anne Hooke) married a son of Sir William Dyer, and great grandson of the famous Sir John Swinerton, Lord Mayor of London.

“Bristol resembles some of the old towns of Belgium and Germany, more perhaps than any other city in Britain; many of the streets are highly picturesque, containing curious timber houses with gables and overhanging upper stories, and numerous windows” (169).

“The new Assize Courts, built upon the site of Colston's House (next door to Sir Henry Creswick's), includes some relics of the most ancient domestic architecture in Bristol. The remains are of the twelfth century; and may be found in the Law Library.



BRISTOL STEEP STREET



ST. PETER'S HOSPITAL

They consist of some clustered piers with cushion capitals of a grand Norman hall, divided by two ranges of arches. A finely curved chimney piece, in the Renaissance style, has been refixed in the adjoining room; another of the same character is to be seen in the Witness-room, and a third in the Board-room. At the rear of the building is retained a beautiful range of pannelled windows, in the three stages of the Tudor period" (170). These relics were undoubtedly taken from some of the fine old Small street mansions, to save them from destruction, after the buildings began to be appropriated to business purposes. This street, and in fact all the old portions of the town, have long been almost wholly given up to business uses. Sir Henry Creswick's house may be presumed to have furnished some of the relics in the new Assize building. "The house known as Elizabethan Hall, opposite the Office of the Bristol Water Works, contains, within a modern frontage, a highly enriched apartment of the sixteenth century, which exhibits a sumptuously carved fire place, and a cross ribbed deep-moulded ceiling with bosses or pendants at the intersections" (171).

"Of the fast vanishing relics of ancient domestic architecture in Bristol, the picturesque gabled mansion (Seyer gives an engraving showing the frontage) known as St. Peter's Hospital behind St. Peter's church, is perhaps the most extensive and characteristic. The original building was erected about the close of the twelfth century by John Norton, who occupied the whole of the ground from the church-yard to the river. According to the dimensions given by William of Worcester, it was 144 feet wide by 155 feet in length, and at either end east and west was a garden. In 1602 it was the property of Robert Chambers, Gentleman, by whom in 1607 it was sold to Robert Aldworthy (Aldworth) Bristol merchant. Soon afterwards the ancient house, with the contiguous parochial buildings, underwent an extensive renovation, insomuch that in a subsequent deed the mansion is described as having been 'by the said Robert Aldworth erected and new-built.' The gabled street front, with its profuse arabesque enrichments, evidently belongs to the Renaissance period, and though frequently referred to an earlier date is unquestionably a part of the mansion reconstructed by Aldworthy (Aldworth), and accords with the date on the river front A.D. 1612. The eastern end of the front however belongs to the earlier edifice. After the death of Aldworthy (Aldworth) in 1634, it became possessed by his relation

Thomas Elbridge, but was successively inhabited by persons of different families, till it ceased to be a private dwelling, and became appropriated to the purposes of trade, being in that capacity first used as a sugar house" (172), and afterwards, in 1695, as a mint.

Taylor, from whom the above is taken, evidently constructed his account of the ownership from fragments of information to connect which some "guess work" was required. There need be little doubt, I think, that it became a sugar house much earlier than he seems to imply, and that it was put to that use soon after its reconstruction by Aldworth in 1612, certainly before his "nephew" and heir Giles Elbridge died in 1643. Its known use as a sugar house subsequently, and its location "behind St. Peter's church," point with great certainty to this as the building called in Giles Elbridge's will "the sugar house (173) in St. Peter's churchyard, Bristol." Taylor's reference to Thomas Elbridge may be explained by the fact that he found someone of that name subsequently making disposition of this property—the one, in fact, who settled and had descendants (174) in this country. Thomas was doubtless acting as executor of the will of his brother John, who inherited this sugar house from his father, Giles Elbridge, partner of Robert Aldworth, and later son-in-law of Alderman Hooke. Thomas, we know, was executor of John's will, and Giles Elbridge, as is well known here, inherited all his partner's property. We find in St. Peter's church, Bristol, a splendid monument near the altar consecrated to the memory of Robert Aldworth, born in 1561, who "is represented as having enjoyed the wealth which he acquired from extensive merchantile transaction, because it furnished him with the means of alleviating the distresses of the indigent." Among the inscriptions on this monument is the following, now nearly obliterated:

"In a vault under this monument
Lies with Martha his wife, Robert Aldworth,
Merchant and Alderman of this city;
Who leaving no issue, bequeathed all his Estate
to Giles Elbridge, Merchant, likewise of this city;
who married his neice.
This monument was repaired and beautified at the
charge of Dowager Lady Smith
1807."

Corry says: "In the same vault" John Elbridge, Esq., is also interred, "upon whose memory rests the splendor which is derived from beneficent activity, resulting from his exertions and contributions in behalf of the Bristol Infirmary." But Taylor, a more recent writer, says: "The remains of John Elbridge, Esq., a philanthropist, whose good deeds are of lasting interest to poorer citizens are interred in Christ church." Corry was mistaken as to the identity of the John Elbridge, buried in St. Peter's in the same vault with his father Giles who died in 1643. John died in 1646. He was not John Elbridge, the philanthropist, who died nearly a hundred years later, but the second son of Giles (the eldest surviving son) and the one of whose will his brother, our New England Thomas Elbridge, was the executor. John, the philanthropist, who died in 1739, and was buried in Christ church, was grandson of Giles, being son of Thomas, the third son of Giles. He was born in the parish of St. Ann, Island of Jamaica, lived for a time in New England, was sent to Bristol for his education, and became Comptroller of his Majesty's customs in that city. St. Michael's church in Marblehead, the oldest church now in use in New England, has a brass chandelier, the gift, in 1732, of "John Elbridge, Esq., Collector of the port of Bristol, England," who in his youthful days was an attendant there, and who also presented an oil painting of himself. The chandelier still hangs in its place, and is used on the evenings of festival days in illuminating the church.

The will of John Elbridge (the philanthropist) gives to "my cousin Henry Wasborrow of Pen Park, and all his sisters, £100 each." They were his first half-cousins, being children of Cicely Elbridge, and great-grandchildren of Alderman Hooke. "I give to my good friends Samuel Creswick (175), Doctor of Divinity (husband of his kinswoman Mary Fane, widow of John Hensley, Esq.), and his wife, the sum of £500 apiece." Appoints his good friend John Scrope, of London, Esq. (his kinsman or second half-cousin, uncle of Mrs. Creswick and son of Mary (Hooke) Scrope, who was niece of his father's step-mother), and John Cosens of Redland, Gloucestershire, to whom he gives £200, and the said Samuel Creswick, his executors. His gifts to his executors being "in token of my respects to them." The specific money donations in this will, chiefly for charities, amounted to over £52,000 (176).

HUMPHREY HOOKE
OF BRISTOL
AND HIS FAMILY AND DESCENDANTS IN
ENGLAND AND AMERICA
DURING THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY
PART TWO
AMERICAN SECTION

ALDERMAN HUMPHREY HOOKE OF BRISTOL, ENGLAND

(The numbers in parentheses refer to notes in appendix)

The commercial interests of England were early attracted to the coast of Maine, owing to its valuable fisheries, and its safe and commodious harbors; and some very early settlements were made on the mainland, and the adjacent islands. The French under Verranzans, first discovered the "Gulf of Maine" in 1524, and called the country New France. Andre Trevet, a Frenchman, visited Penobscot bay in 1556, and Martin Pring, an Englishman, went there in 1603. The latter sailed up the Kennebec, into Casco bay, and up the Saco river. Capt. Weymouth followed the same course in 1605. Martin Pring's voyage was promoted by Robert Aldworth, a Bristol merchant. Aldworth's partner, Giles Elbridge, as already shown, was at a later period Alderman Hooke's son-in-law. The body of Martin Pring was buried in St. Stephen's church in Bristol, and a monument there to his memory is still, I think, in existence. On the 17th of August 1607, an English company under George Popham and Raleigh Gilbert began a settlement at the mouth of the Kennebec river, called at that point the Sagadahock. The severe winter that followed was the means of breaking up this first English colony in Maine. But "years before the Pilgrims set foot on Plymouth sands, English settlements were established at various points on the shores of Maine. It was at Pemaquid that Samoset (Somerset) learned the language of the English, so that he was able to say to the Plymouth colony as they landed, 'Much welcome Englishment!' And it was to Pemaquid that the Plymouth colony sent for food in that bitter winter. . . . English, French, Spanish, Portuguese, Dutch and Italian ships were accustomed to rendezvous about Pemaquid and Monhegan. . . . In 1614 Capt. John Smith (of Pocahontas fame) carried 47,000 dried fish from Monhegan home to England" (177).

In 1622 Abraham Jennens of Plymouth, England, bought Monhegan of the "Council for New England" (178), and sent out two ships. A settlement on the island was begun by him, and a fort constructed in 1623. A few years later, however, Robert Aldworth (179), the merchant of Bristol, mentioned above, and

Giles Elbridge, his partner, and "nephew" (by marriage with his niece Elizabeth, daughter of John Aldworth of Bristol), hearing that Mr. Jennens proposed to break up his plantation at Monhegan, authorized their agent Abraham Shurt to buy the island. Mr. Shurt then crossed the Atlantic, and after examination, negotiated the purchase for the sum of fifty pounds sterling, by a draft on his principals. This has been called the first bill of exchange in our commercial history.

"The Pilgrims at Plymouth, finding the fisheries in this section of the coast more productive than those further south, purchased them in 1628 of Monquim, sagamore of Kennebec" (180). This, and other competition in their chosen field, appear to have led Aldworth and Elbridge to seek a grant from the Council for New England, to enable them, in furtherance of their own fishing enterprises, to start a permanent settlement on the mainland, at Pemaquid, adjacent to their island of Monhegan (181). This grant they finally received. Judge Williamson, in commenting on the Pemaquid patent, says it is "a charter, as well as a patent, because, in addition to the rights of property, it confers the power of establishing civil government" (182).

The following is an abstract of the Pemaquid Grant :

"The nine-and-twentieth Day of February, 1631 (183), . . . the President and Council of New England . . . in consideration that . . . Robert Aldworth and Gyles Elbridge have and will transport, and doth undertake to transport at their owne Cost and Charges, divers Persons into New England, and there to erect and built a Town and fettle divers inhabitants, . . . grant, affign, allot and appoint to the said Robert Aldworth and Gyles Elbridge, their Heirs and affigns, and every of them, one hundred Acres of Ground for every person so by them, or any of them transported . . . within the space of seven Years next ensuing that shall abide or continue three Years, either at one or severall Times." . . . They further grant "unto the said Robert Aldworth and Gyles Elbridge, their Heirs and Affigns, twelve thousand Acres of Land, moreover and above the afforsaid Proportion of one hundred Acres the Person for every Person transported or to be transported . . . as their proper Inheritants for ever . . . to be laid near the River commonly called . . . Pemaquid . . . next adjoining the Place where the People or Servants of the said Robert Aldworth and Giles Elbridge are now fettled, or have inhabited for the Space of three Years last past; . . . to be taken and Chosen . . . both along the Sea Coast as the Coast lieth, and so up the River as far as may contain the said twelve thousand Acres within the said Breadth and Length. . . . Together Also with all the Islands and Iflets within the Limitts next adjoining the said Land butting within the limitts foresaid, three Leagues into the Main Ocean. Yealding and Paying unto our

Sovereign Lord the King; his Heirs and Successors, on fift Part of all the *Gold and Silver car* to be found." And the President and Council further empowered Capt. Walter Neale and Richard as their Attorneys, to enter upon the land and deliver "Possession and Seizin unto the said Robert Aldworth and Gyles Elbridge or their Attorney—ratifying whatsoever their said Attorney should do in the premises." In witness, etc.

(signed) R. Warwick. (Seal) Ford: Gorge

"Md. The possession of all Lands contained in this Patent was delivered by me Walter Neale unto Abraham Shurte (184) to the Use of Robert Aldworth and Gyles Elbridge, Merchant of the City of Bristol, this 27th of May, A.D. 1633.

(signed) Wa: Neale"

"Witness to the Delivery of the said Possession:

Thomas Cammock
Christopher Burnhead
George Newman
William Hooke
Robert Knight."

Here we have the first appearance of the name of William Hooke in this country, so far as documentary history goes. It appears to have been about fifteen months after the above grant was obtained, before formal possession of the territory it covered was delivered by the agent of the Council for New England. In order that delivery of possession might be endorsed upon the document itself, it was sent over from England in the winter of 1632-3, in charge doubtless of William Hooke, son of Alderman Hooke of Bristol, and also perhaps of William Hooke's future (as it appears) brother-in-law (185) Robert Knight "of Bristol, Merchant" (186). William Hooke was Giles Elbridge's brother-in-law, and his partner in the *Agamenticus* patent, and was apparently the one most likely to be instructed with the charge, while Robert Knight was probably a connection, perhaps nephew of Robert Aldworth, since the wives of both Robert and his brother John Aldworth were members of the Knight family. Aldworth and Elbridge's attorney Shurte were at that time at Pemaquid, and the Council's agent, Capt. Neale, at Piscataqua. Mr. Shurte stated in a deposition made in 1662, that the patent *was sent over to him*, but he did not state who brought it. The original document is now deposited in the archives of the Maine Historical Society. A notarial copy is preserved in the library of the American Antiquarian Society (187).

The Bristol party which landed at Fort La Tour, sailing thence in La Tour's pinnace to *Agamenticus*, but stopping on the way

at Pemaquid to deliver the grant to Shurte, consisted of William Hooke (age 21), and "other personages" (188), who without doubt, I think, were Robert Knight (age about 48) (189), probably nephew of Robert Aldworth (190); Mrs. Eleanor Norton (probably Robert Knight's sister), the wife, and shortly after the widow of Lieutenant Colonel Walter Norton (called Capt. Norton in New England), and later the wife of William Hooke; and Jane Norton (age about 14), daughter of Walter and Eleanor Norton (unless, as is probable, by a former wife of said Walter), and afterwards the wife of Henry Simpson. If there were ladies in the party, which seems almost certain, the "courtesy" of the Frenchman, La Tour, (to which Mr. Hooke refers in his interview with Gov. Winthrop) appears natural, if not inevitable.

That this reference to La Tour may be understood, it should be stated that the Massachusetts people were at a subsequent time trying to ease their consciences for having in an unguarded moment been influenced by the "Papist" (191) La Tour's diplomacy into a breach of neutrality in giving him indirect aid in his quarrel with his French rival D'Aulney. Many of the magnets were disposed to make a scapegoat of the Governor, who had perhaps acted rashly or unwisely, in view of the prejudices of some of his puritan associates; and after recounting the arguments that were had *pro* and *con*, Gov. Winthrop says (192), under date of 1643: "Besides the former arguments there came since to Boston one Mr. Hooke (193), *a godly gentleman*, and a deputy of the Court for Salisbury; who related of the good usage and great courtesy which La Tour had showed to himself and other personages, who were landed at his fort about nine years since, as they came from England, and how the ship leaving them there, and only a small shallop to bring them to these parts, and a dangerous bay of 12 leagues to be passed over, he would not suffer them to depart before he had provided his own pinnace to transport them."

La Tour (the elder), although a Frenchman, bore among his other titles, one from Sir William Alexander, King James' Secretary of State for Scotland, afterwards Earl of Stirling and Viscount of Canada. Williamson says: "La Tour's immediate residence seems to have been either at Port Royal, or 'the fort la Tour and Alexander,' on the St. John; and Sir William (Alexander) who had the right (by virtue of the patent obtained from James I, Sept. 10, 1621), of conferring titles of honor upon any inhabitant of New Scotland (Nova Scotia), gave him (the elder La Tour),

Nov. 30, 1629, the hereditary order of baronet of the country, in express retribution of his worth and high attainments to the British interests" (194). Hazzard states his title to have been, "Sir Claude de St. Estienne, Knight, lord de la Tour et de la War, baronet of New Scotland" (195). Haliburton, in speaking of events at this period, says, "There is much obscurity in this part of the history connected with Sir William Alexander and the elder La Tour, and what little is to be found on the subject is contradictory and perplexed" (196). The younger La Tour (Charles Estienne la Tour) who flourished at the time of Mr. Hooke's arrival, in addition to his own rights in the country, seems to have inherited the rights, titles, and possessions of his father. He received, in 1630, in addition thereto, a conveyance from Sir William Alexander of the whole of Nova Scotia. He was, it would appear, "determined to have a good portion of the country, whither it was under the dominion of England, France or Scotland," and he therefore "procured, it is said from King Charles, a confirmation of Sir William's grant to him, and from Louis, the french King, a commission, Feb. 11, 1631, to be governor of Arcadia" (197). Winthrop says (198): "La Tour is styled by the Vice Admiral of France, 'his Majesty's lieutenant general L'Arcadye'" (199).

In the winter of 1632, just before the arrival of Mr. Hooke, some trouble arose between the Pemaquid planters and one Dixey Bull, who was at that time on the coast of Maine, probably on some fishing or trading expedition. Thornton says (200), Bull "took to himself a company of desperadoes, and raised the black flag of piracy. . . . They took several vessels at sea, *and rifled the fort at Pemaquid, and plundered the planters*" (201) (202). Had there been any testimony on Mr. Bull's side of the case it is possible that he could have proved himself a much less desperate character than he is here represented. His previous record as a worthy citizen of London seems to have been sufficiently good to have recommended him to the favorable consideration of Gorges, and the Council for New England, and in passing judgment upon him it seems a pity that he cannot be heard from in the matter. It is possible that some conflict or dispute had arisen between Mr. Shurte and Mr. Bull over the exclusive right of the former as agent for Aldworth and Elbridge, to the fishing, or at least the curing of fish at Pemaquid, or on the island and islets thereabouts "butting three Leagues into the Maine Ocean" etc., and that Mr. Bull had attempted

reprisal for his exclusion from rights to which he may have thought himself entitled. Shurte's followers may have been the aggressors when the trouble began. It was undoubtedly a fact, as Mr. Thornton testifies, that "the futile and unhappy attempts to monopolize the trade and fisheries on our seas was a prolific source of discord and petty quarrels." Winthrop's explanation of the provocation (203) was that the *French* captured the shallop and cargo of Dixey Bull whom they caught trading within their territory; but as Mr. Bull's reprisals were apparently upon the Pemaquid people only, it would seem possible that Winthrop was misinformed; and this theory is somewhat sustained by the fact that Winthrop subsequently drew a line through the above statement in his journal as if he thought its authority was doubtful. Winthrop's statement may have been correct as to the capture of the Bull's shallop and cargo by somebody, and the fact that he turned upon the followers of Shurte may indicate who the aggressors were. Under date of Dec. 5, 1632, Winthrop writes that the extreme cold had delayed them in getting ready the bark which they had voted to send to the assistance of Pemaquid, and as they heard that Neale was sending two pinnaces and two shallops, "it was agreed to send a shallop to learn more. . . . Accordingly the governour dispatched away John Gallopp with his Shallop. *The wind being very great* he could reach no farther than Cape Ann harbour that night; and the winds blowing northerly he was kept there so long that it was January 2d before he returned" (204).

In trying to account for the landing of Mr. Hooke at the French fort "La Tour" instead of the Pemaquid fort, I have thought it possible that the settlement at the latter place may have been temporarily abandoned during the winter that had just ended as he and his companions arrived on the coast of Maine. Pemaquid may have become untenable as winter quarters in consequence of the depredations of the "pirate" Bull, and its occupants may have gone in Neale's vessels to Piscataqua, upon their return to that place after the failure of the expedition sent by Neale to capture Mr. Bull. Winthrop says (205) that Neale and Hilton at Piscataqua, "sent out all the forces they could make against the pirate—four pinnaces and shallops, and about forty men, who, arriving at Pemaquid, were there *wind bound about three weeks.*" Thornton says: "This was the first hostile fleet fitted out from New England." Thornton, continuing, and giving Winthrop as author-

ity, says: "‘But about the middle of January’ Neale’s vessels had returned to Strawberry Bank (Portsmouth), the cold being as great they could not pursue the pirate."

It is not by any means improbable that this fleet took the plundered and thoroughly alarmed planters to Piscataqua to remain for a time, for "perils did abound as thick as thought could make them" (206). The Pemaquid settlers certainly appear to have been in poor shape to withstand the severe winter. Previous to their loss by the "pirate," while Shurte was visiting Neale at Piscataqua "with a cargo of about 200 pounds sterling in value, . . . both his vessels and goods were totally lost by the explosion of a barrel of powder" (207). If the Pemaquid fort was abandoned (208) for the winter, it may have been still deserted upon the arrival some time possibly in April, of this English vessel in which Mr. Hooke and the others were passengers. Finding it deserted, the ship may have gone thence to fort "La Tour," in preference to Piscataqua, the former being perhaps the more available port. However, it is possible that the captain of this English vessel, with rumor of pirates (209) about, may have found *the winds* as unfavorable to the further progress of his ship, in that particular direction, as they had proved to the vessels of Neale and Hilton, and to Gallop with his shallop. The captain of the Bristol ship, which quite likely belonged either to Mr. Elbridge or to Alderman Hooke, must in any event have been influenced by good and sufficient reasons, when he landed his passengers at fort La Tour, instead of taking them to Pemaquid or Agamenticus, to one of which points he doubtless originally intended to go. It seems reasonable to suppose that the captain of *any* Bristol ship would have done his best to provide for the safety and comfort of Mr. Hooke and his companions; and as they could hardly have left England with the intention or expectation of going from fort La Tour to Pemaquid with no better accommodation than a small shallop would afford, it seems not improbable that either the doubtless exaggerated stories, then prevalent on the coast regarding pirates, or the temporary desertion of Pemaquid, was the cause of their landing at La Tour.

The feeling that pirates might still be about the coast, evidently prevailed as late even as the month of May. Thornton says (210): "The Bay people did afterwards, in the pleasant month of May, send off Lieutenant Mason, the famous Pequod warrior, to cap-

ture Mr. Bull; but he and the 'extremity of snow and frost' had both disappeared."

The scare about pirates or possibly some anticipation of trouble with others as a result of the fishing monopoly exercised by the patentees at Pemaquid, was perhaps largely instrumental in causing Mr. Elbridge (Aldworth was then deceased) to send thither his largest armed vessel, the *Angel Gabriel* (one of the most powerful English warships in the port of Bristol, already celebrated in song (211) for the capture, single handed, of three Spanish warships) (212), thereby departing from his usual custom of sending his fishing vessels only. The *Angel Gabriel* was a ship of 300 tons, carrying a heavy armament of 16 guns. She brought a large number of passengers, including the distinguished Richard Mather, and John Cogswell, a London merchant of wealth and position, who settled at Ipswich, Mass. The ship had hardly reached her anchorage at Pemaquid, when, in the fury of an easterly storm which suddenly arose, she was wrecked—ship and cargo being a total loss. Several of the passengers were also lost.

Having introduced Mrs. Eleanor Norton, who fills a very important place in these annals, it is necessary to refer to her husband, Lieutenant Colonel Walter Norton, an officer of distinction, who had won promotion by his valor. He was commended for bravery and brilliant service at the famous siege of Ostend, where he served under the heroic Sir Francis Vere. He was one of the gallant "two thousand English" who constituted about a fourth part of the garrison when the siege began; a siege, says Motley (213), "which for endurance, pertinacity, valour, and bloodshed on both sides, had not yet been forshadowed, far less equalled, upon the fated Netherland soil. . . . In the town (Ostend) Sir Francis Vere commanded. Few shapes are more familiar to the student of those times than this veteran campaigner, the offshoot of a time-honored race. . . . He seemed, in his gold inlaid Milan corslet and ruff of point lace, the very image of a partizan chieftain; one of the noblest relics of a race of fighters slowly passing off the world's stage. . . . Assaults, sorties, repulses, and ambuscades were of daily occurrence." In the early part of the siege, "five hundred were killed outright in half-an-hour's assault on an impregnable position one autumn evening, and lay piled in heaps beneath the Sand Hill fort—many youthful gallants from Spain and Italy among them, noble volunteers recognized by their per-

fumed gloves and golden chains. . . . The men worked day and night, searching the flames, yet freezing knee-deep in the icy slush of the trenches, and perpetually under fire of the hostile batteries, became daily more and more exhausted, notwithstanding their determination to hold the place."

Among the State papers in Her Majesty's Public Record Office, is a testimonial under date of June 13, 1624, given by Col. Sir John Ogle and John Bingham to the services of Capt. Walter Norton in the Low Countries, at the seige of Ostend. Col. Sir John Ogle (214) (then Capt. Ogle) and Capt. Fairfax (215) were the hostages sent to the Spanish lines outside the walls of Ostend by Sir Francis Vere, while maneuvering to delay an assault in the early part of the seige.

The following year appears a letter (216), dated "Blackfriars at Lady Coffin's House, May 27, 1625," from John Bowle, Dean of Sarum (217), to Sec. Conway, conveying his thanks for the granting of his suit in behalf of an old soldier, Capt. Walter Norton.

Before 1629, the date of the next paper (218) I have noted, Capt. Norton had been commissioned Lieutenant Colonel, and under date of February 26, 1629, there is filed the petition of Walter Norton, Lieutenant Colonel, to the Council of War, detailing services and great losses, and praying order for his pay. Underwritten is a reference to Capt. John Mason (who was paymaster of the army) to report what is due (219).

Sir Ferdinando Gorges in his "Brief Narration," published by his grandson Ferdinando, says:

"Lieutenant Colonel Norton undertaking to settle a Plantation on the river Agomentico, if I pleased to bear a part with him and his associates.

"This gentleman was one I had *long known* (Gorges had also served in the 'Low Countries') who had raised himself from a soldier to the quality he had, from a corporal to a sergeant, and so upwards. He was painful and industrious, well understanding what belonged to his duties in whatsoever he undertook, and strongly affected to the business of plantation. Having acquainted me of his designs and his associates, I gave him my word I would be his intercessor to the Lords for obtaining him a Patent for any place he desired, not already granted to any other. But conceiving he should be so much the better fortified, if he could get me to be an undertaker with him and his associates, upon his

motion I was contented my grandson Ferdinando should be nominated together with him and the rest; to whom was passed a Patent of twelve thousand acres of land upon the east side of the river Agomentico, and twelve thousand acres more of land on the west side to my said son Ferdinando. Hereupon he and some of his associates hastened to take possession of their territories, carrying with them their families, and other necessary provissions; and I sent over for my son, my nephew Captain William Gorges, who had been my lieutenant in the fort of Plymouth (England) with some other craftsmen for the building of houses and erecting of saw-mills; and by other shipping from Bristol, some cattle, with other servants,—by which the foundation of the Plantation was laid. And I was the more hopeful of the happy success thereof, for I had not far from that place Richard Vines, a gentleman and servant of my own, who had settled there some years before, and had been interested in the discovery and seizure thereof for me, as formerly hath been related.”

Colonel Norton, who is called “Captain Norton” in colonial records, seems to have been very generally ignored or overlooked by those who have investigated our early memorials. When referred to at all he has usually been confounded with Francis Norton, who did not come over until 1638; and who has been called Captain, which he may have been, although Mr. Waters, in his pedigree of the Houghton family, shows that he was a fishmonger. Perhaps he was also, or previously, a haberdasher, as shown in a pedigree of the same family published by the Harleian Society (220). Possibly, as he was a member of the Society of Fishmongers, his title of Captain came from his command of a fishing vessel. Even Savage, usually pretty accurate, but singularly disinclined to admit himself in error, in speaking of Captain Walter Norton, says: “Admitted a freeman May 18, 1631; but very uncertain it is, when or whence he came, whither he went, or where he resided, except that Charlestown may seem better entitled than any other town, for a Captain Norton was very early settled there; and it has been guessed that this is the Captain killed by the Pequots in 1633, who by me is, in the Index to Winthrop’s History, called John, on what authority, however, in the lapse of thirty years is forgotten.”

It is not strange that the conclusions of early writers should occasionally prove erroneous (221). The investigators of today

have their material more readily available, and have less excuse for blundering.

Although the exact date of Colonel Norton's arrival in this country is not determined, it was probably in the latter part of 1629, or early in 1630. He was certainly in Charlestown in the latter year, and took the oath of allegiance there in the early part of 1631. He probably left England very shortly after filing his petition for his pay, February 26, 1629-30, if not before. Sir Ferdinando's promise, to "be his intercessor with the Lords for obtaining him a patent" (222), was probably given about the same time. "Thomas Graves, Gent., and Ingineer," who was subsequently one of his associates in the Agamenticus patent, probably accompanied him to America. They are both described in the patent as *of New England* in 1631 (223). Referring to Mr. Graves, Frothingham says (224): "There is said to be in the British Museum, 'A coppie of a letter from an *ingineer* sent out to New England A.D. 1629,' giving an account of his landing with a small company in Salem." If Mr. Frothingham's information is correct, it seems highly probable that Lieut. Col. Walter Norton was a member of this "small company." The Charlestown records, after giving the names of thirteen of the seventeen settlers who remained in Charlestown, after the removal to Shawmut (Boston), in 1630, add:

"Capt'n Norton Mr. Edward Gibbons (225) Mr. William Jennings Jno. Wignall	}	These four went and built in the maine, on the Northeast side of the north-west creek of this town."
--	---	--

This location would be on the Mystic side, or in Malden, says Frothingham.

On receipt of news, in the winter of 1631-32, that his patent had been granted, Col. Norton probably made preparations for removing to Agamenticus in the early part of 1632, and beginning the construction of his house. It was doubtless finished that year, so as to be ready for the arrival of his wife and child the following Spring.

Col. Norton with his wife, Eleanor, and daughter Jane (226) were certainly at Agamenticus in the summer of 1633. Of this there can be no doubt whatever. Exposure to the hardships of active service in the army would seem to have afforded this valiant

campaigner just the preparation necessary for the life of a New England pioneer, yet he was among the first victims to one of its numerous perils and dangers. Having forsaken the sword for the arts of peace, he was nevertheless destined to perish by the sword just as he had prepared a home in the New England wilderness for his wife and daughter and had gotten them safely under its roof. It seems that Capt. John Stone of Accomac, Virginia, came in his pinnace to Agamenticus in the summer of 1633. He was a brother of William Stone (afterwards first Protestant Governor of Maryland—1648 to 1655), the ancestor of Thomas Stone, signer of the Declaration of Independence. Col. Norton was induced to join him and his companions on their return to Virginia, but with what object in view is unknown. On the way thither they appear to have designed visiting a Dutch trading post on the Connecticut river, but before reaching that point they were surprised by a body of Pequot Indians—the most savage of the New England tribes, who killed the entire party. Thus Mrs. Norton, the future wife of William Hooke, was left a widow.

Gov. Winthrop says (227): “January 21st 1633 (1633-4). News came from Plymouth that Capt. Stone, who this last summer went out of the bay or lake, and so to Agamenticus, where he took in Capt. Norton, putting in at the mouth of Connecticut, in his way to Virginia, where the Pequins inhabit, was there cut off by them with all his companions, being eight.”

Gov. Bradford (228), in his “History of Plymouth Plantation,” speaking of Captaine Stone, “that had lived in Christophers, one of y^e (229) West-Ende Ilands, and now had been some time in Virginia, and came from thence into these parts,” and who “in y^e company of some other gentlemen came afterwards to Plimoth, and had friendly & civill entertainente amongst them, with y^e rest,” says:

“He afterwards returned to Virginia, in a pinass, with one Captaine Norton & some others; and I know not for what occasion, they would needs goe up Connigtecutt River; and how they carried themselves I know not, but y^e Indeans knoct him in y^e head as he lay in his cabine, and had thrown y^e covering over his face (whether out of fear or desperation is uncertaine); this was his end. They likewise killed all y^e rest, but Captaine Norton defended himselfe a long time against them all in y^e cooke-roome, till by accidente the gunpowder tooke fire, which (for readynes) he had sett in an open thing before him, which did so burne, & scald him, & blind his eyes, as he could make no longer resistance but was slaine also by them, though

they much commended his vallour. And having killed y^e men, they made a pray of what they had, and chafered away some of their things to y^e Dutch, that lived their."

Winthrop says: "We agreed to write the governor of Virginia (because Stone was of that colony), to move him to revenge it, and upon his answer to take further counsel" (230).

The original records of the Council for New England are unfortunately not now in existence; but a transcript of a portion of them, made upon rolls of parchment, is to be found in Her Majesty's Public Record Office, among the papers labelled "Colonial." A copy, made therefrom, edited by Mr. Charles Deane, has recently (1867) been published, under the direction of the American Antiquarian Society, with the title "Records of the President and Council for New England." Mr. Deane says: "Neither of these *fragments* is believed to be a portion of the *original* record; but both are transcripts, subsequently made, and probably for judicial investigation." The following two entries, from Mr. Deane's copy, are important to us, as they refer, without doubt I think, to the Patents under which Mr. Hooke derived title to his possessions in the Province of Maine. It will be noticed that the reference to Lieutenant Colonel Walter Norton tallies with Sir Ferdinando's reference to him in the extract quoted from the *Brief Narration*.

"Att Warwick House the 2d of Dec. 1631

There being presid't.

The Earle of Warwick, Presid't.

The LD Gorges, & SR Ferdinand Gorges, Thr^{er}.

There was this p^r sent day sealed a Patt^t. granted to Ferdinando Gorges (231), sonn and heir of John Gorges of London, Esq^r., Walter Norton, Lieut. Coll., Tho. Coppyn. Esq. (232), Samuel Maverick Esq., Thomas Graves, Gent., an Ingineer, Ralph Grover, Mercht., W^m Jeffryes, Gent., John Busley, Gent., Joel Woolsey, Gent., *all of New England*, Robert Norton, Esq^r. (233), Richard Norton, Gent., George Norton of Sharpenhov in y^e County of Bedford, and Robert Rainsford (234) y^e younger of London, Gent."

This patent was for 12,000 acres on the east side of the river Agamenticus, and 12,000 acres additional to young Gorges on the west side, with the proviso, as in the Pemaquid patent, of 100 acres of land for every person transported, the same inclusion of "all y^e Islands or Isletts within y^e Limitts next adjoyning y^e a^d Land. 3 leagues into y^e Maine Ocean," and the provision for a

fifth part "of the Gold & Silver care" to go "to the King's Ma^{tie}." The Council records show that it was in its powers, privileges, and conditions, practically word for word with the Pemaquid patent, already partially quoted. An entry in the Council records, made Dec. 1, 1631, shows that a form had been decided upon for *all* subsequent grants of this kind—this Agamenticus patent probably being the first one issued thereafter, and the Pemaquid patent, issued three months later, the next but one thereafter. The record of the meeting "Att Warwicke House," Dec. 1, 1631, reads in part as follows: "It was ordered this present day that there should be one gen^l forme of Pattents agreed on for particular undertakers of petty plantaons, . . . and *one other* for those that were undertakers for Erecting of Townes & planting of great numb^{rs} of people und^r ord^r & Governm^t with their magistrates & inferior officers of Justice," with "power for to fraime & make such laws and constitutions as—shall be thought fitt," etc.

The following entry shows that this patent was in a measure superseded.

"Att Warwick House
2d March 1632
There being present
The Earle of Warwicke, Presid^t &
Sir Ferd: Gorges, Kn^t Threr.

There was this day two Patents sealed, both of one tenure, to S^r Ferd Gorges, Son and Heire of John Gorges of London, Esq. Walter Norton, Lieutenant Coll., etc., of the same date and upon the same consideration and Tenure as the Patent which was sealed to them and the rest therein specified, the 2d of December last past before the date hereof, being verbatim word for word with the said Patent, excepting onely the taking out of Thomas Coppin, Esq^r, Joel Woolsey, Gent, George Norton, Gent, and Robert Rainsford, and inserting in their places, Seth Bull, Cittizen and Skinner of London, Dixey Bull, Mathey Bradley of London, Gent, and John Bull, Son of the said Seth, so that this Patent is the last and true Patent, and the other cancelled and made voyd."

The original patents above referred to are not now supposed to be in existence, and no copy of them has been found. There seems to be some little evidence however, as will appear later, that this last mentioned patent (for the east or north side of the river) was in 1717, and probably from that date until 1743, in the hands

of Alderman Hooke's great-grandson William Hooke of Salisbury, Mass.

It may be well at this point to state that, preparatory to the voluntary surrender of their charter to the king, the members of the Council for New England, notwithstanding the above and numerous other grants, made a general distribution among themselves by lot of the territory over which they had jurisdiction extending from Maryland to the St. Croix river; and that portion lying between the Piscataqua and the Sagadahock, fell to the share or proprietorship of Sir Ferdinando Gorges. "The division of the territory among the patentees was made on the 3d of February 1635 (1634-5), the grants were executed April 22d and on the 7th of June (1635) following, the president and council made a full surrender of their Charter to the King" (235). In the grants made to the different members of the Council, at the above division the following proviso was inserted: "Saving & reserving out of this division to every one that hath any Lawfull grant of Lands or plantations lawfully settled in y^e same, y^e freeholding & enjoying of his right with y^e libertyes appertaining, laying down his *Jura regalia* (if he have any) to y^e Proprietors of his division wherein his Land lyeth, & paying some small acknowledgement for y^t he is now to hold his said Land anew of the proprietor of this division" (236).

Those who have written histories of Maine covering the early colonial period seem to have had a very vague or confused idea of the situation in regard to patents at Agamenticus, some of them apparently assuming that there were several different patents granted for that locality (north side of the river), each one independent of the other, and each as it would appear covering either the whole or a portion of the same territory. Those who have reached this conclusion, as it seems to me, have done so upon a partial or superficial examination of the evidence. Some confusion and uncertainty may be warranted by a difference which seems to exist between the date of the Agamenticus patent, and the time of its sealing and entry upon the records of the Council for New England, one day having apparently intervened; the subsequent references being at times to the date of the instrument, and at others to the date of its entry in the book of records. Further misapprehension would seem to be due to a confusion of terms, or a misunderstanding, on the part of Godfrey and

Maverick, in their references to a certain writing or document which was probably made in consequence of what appears to have been an order to that effect issued by certain former members of the Council for New England at a meeting held by them in March 1637, and which Godfrey and Maverick call a patent, as if it were a *new* patent issued by the Council two years after its authority to grant one had ceased. In the entry made March 22, 1637, in the Council records, the word *confirmed* instead of "*renewed*," I think, should have been used; and if Godfrey and Maverick had claimed to hold under the patent of Dec. 1, 1631, and added the date of the subsequent confirmation, which seems to have been valuable only (and even this is doubtful, because apparently unnecessary) as having the endorsement of the then lord proprietor, they would have stated the situation in the only way it seems to me we can reasonably interpret it.

As two patents for the same identical land, each to a different set of patentees, cannot have been "sealed" on the *same day*, or on any two days, *one immediately following the other*, both patents conveying rights to which reference was subsequently made, we must of course conclude that the *only* patent sealed on the 2d of Dec. 1631 for land at Agamenticus was the one of which I have already given an abstract. There is therefore nothing to support the theory that there was another patent issued Dec. 1, 1631 to Godfrey, Maverick, Hooke, and others, of 12,000 acres at Agamenticus. On the contrary it seems to me there can be *no doubt* that the grant "unto Edward Godfrey and others therein named," referred to in Mr. Deane's copy of Council records as having been *sealed* Dec. 2, 1631, and renewed or confirmed to the patentees (1) thereunder on the 23d of March 1637-38, was the one referred to in York Deeds as *dated* Dec. 1, 1631. The entry of March 2, 1632 shows that two patents were substituted for the one sealed Dec. 2, 1631, with patentees in one of them differing in several instances from those originally named (evidently however at the request, or with the assent of all the parties concerned), but both having the same *date* as the original—one being to Sir Ferdinando's grandson on the west (south) side of the river, and the other to him and the remaining patentees on the east (north) side. If then the above conclusions are correct (and there seems to be no escape from them) we must further conclude that the original Agamenticus patentees, with the exception of Gorges, Maverick,

and Jeffreys, and perhaps Col. Norton, subsequently *assigned* their rights to Humphrey, Thomas, and William Hooke, Giles Elbridge, Robt. Thomson, Edward Godfrey, and others, some time probably in 1633—the period during which all reference to proceedings is missing in Mr. Deane's copy of Council Records—the assignment then perhaps being assented to by the Council, and an endorsement to that effect made upon the instrument itself.

This, I think, is the only conclusion that can be reached in light of the entry in Mr. Deane's copy showing *renewal in 1637* of the grant "*mentioned in this Book y^e 2, day of December 1631.*" We must account for Edward Godfrey and William Hooke as patentees at Agamenticus prior to 1637. We must also account for ten patentees, not mentioned in the original grant, referred to either Dec. 2, 1631 or March 2, 1632, out of the thirteen patentees at Agamenticus (the exact *number* mentioned Dec. 2, 1631) among whom, and the only ones among whom, 12,000 acres in that location (237) were equally divided in 1641. And this was the only division of land made there under any patent upon which titles depend, either in 1641, prior to 1641, or at any subsequent time. One of the ten patentees, above referred to, may have represented the heirs of Col. Walter Norton, but not the other nine. The entry in Mr. Deane's copy showing confirmation, or renewal, of the original grant reads as follows:

"At y^e Lord Gorges
y^e 22 March 1637
present

The Earle of Sterline
The Lord Alexander

The Lord Maltravers
The Lord Gorges.

The Grant mentioned in this Booke y^e 2, day of December 1631 was ordered to be renewed againe unto Edward Godfrey & *others therein named*. and this day y^e Seale of y^e Company was sett thereunto."

The word "again," in the above entry may possibly be significant.

Now the patent as originally sealed on the day referred to, or as amended on the 2d of March 1632 (but dated as at first), *did not include Edward Godfrey's name* in either case, as is shown by the entries already quoted from the Council records. He and either eight or nine of his associates therefore *must have been the assignees* of most of the original patentees, entitled with

those who still retained their interest (Maverick and Jeffreys were apparently the only ones who did not join in the assignment) to all the rights and privileges of those originally named in the grant, and to *them*, on the 23d of March 1637-38, the old patent was renewed or confirmed, probably by an endorsement thereon bearing the seal of the Council, and the hand and seal, as stated by Maverick, of Sir Ferdinando Gorges the lord proprietor. Godfrey and most of his associates were certainly not original patentees, they were therefore necessarily assignees of said patentees by assignment *endorsed upon the original instrument*, since they were "*named therein.*"

One of the results of Godfrey's trip to England in 1637 was this renewal or confirmation of the 1631 grant. This attainment however was merely incidental to his trip thither, which was caused primarily by a summons from the Star Chamber, issued at the instigation of George Cleeves, to which reference will be made later.

Whatever may have been the precise form of the endorsement, or instrument, sealed on the 22d of March 1637, which is called in the Council records a renewal, and by Godfrey and Maverick, in their conveyances here, "patent bearing date March 23, 1637," the essential fact, as shown by the record last quoted, is that the only persons benefitted or in any way affected by it were those claiming title in 1637 under the patent sealed Dec. 2, 1631, and dated probably Dec. 1, 1631, so that, whatever it may or should have been called, it was to all intents and purposes a *confirmation* (238) of the original instrument, which properly speaking was therefore the only patent granted at Agamenticus.

I make the 23d of March 1637 the date of the renewal or confirmation, although the date given in the entry in Mr. Deane's copy is the 22d of March. Perhaps the discrepancy is due to an error in transcribing from the books of the Council in preparing the copy now in the Public Record Office. However as Sir Ferdinando Gorges, the lord proprietor, was not present at the meeting on the 22d, his hand and seal, which were added to the patent, *must have been obtained subsequently*, perhaps on the 23d, and that date entered upon the instrument as of his act—perhaps the only writing actually endorsed thereon at that time. If the patent was a new one from Gorges, it is difficult to understand why the lord proprietors of other parts of the Continent should have had a

hand in the matter, and why the seal of the defunct company should have been affixed to it. Grantors in York Deeds claiming under the "renewal" of 1637 may have been mistaken as to the authority of the Council at that time, and as to the nature of the proceedings on the 22d of March (the papers themselves were not improbably left in charge of Alderman Hooke (239), who is called by Godfrey the "chief patentee" at Agamenticus), but they certainly refer to it as a grant, or patent (or both) dated *March 23, 1637-38*. For evidence of this, witness among others the following:

York deeds, 1, part 1, p. 9. "Coppie of a Grant from Mr. Samuell Mavericke Mr. Edward Godfrey & Mr. William Hooke to John Heard—

The present Deed made this 18th Day of July 1650 witnesseth that whereas by virtue of a grant & patent bearing date 23d March 1637, there was granted to Humphrey Hooke Samuel Mavericke Edw. Godfrey and their associates 12000 Ackres of Land lying & being on the North Sid of the River of Accoment^s."

York deeds, 1, part 1, p. 19, June 25, 1652, Edward Godfrey recites a patent to himself and associates "bearing date 23d March 1637 & divission y^r of made 11th June 1641."

York deeds, 1, part 1, pp. 118-119. "This Indenture made y^e five & Twentieth day of Novemb^r: In the seaventeenth yeare of the Reigne of our Sovereigne Lord King Charles (1642), . . . between Sam^{ll} Mavericke of Nodles Yland In the Massatusetts bay Gentl^e: of the one part & Roger Gard of Agamenticus in the Province of Mayne on y^e other part . . . (Witnesseth) That w^r as It pleased the Counsell of New England & Sir Fardind^o: Gorges Knightt by y^r deeds (240) Indented vnder the co^man seale of the s^d Counsell & the hand & seale of the s^d Fardinad^o Gorges, beareing Date the *three & twentieth* day of March In y^e thyrtheenth yeare of the Reigne of our Sovereigne Lord King Charles (1637-8), to grant bargain sell Infeffe & *Confirme* unto the said Sam^{ll} Mavericke and *other Pattentees* there heyres & *Assigns* forever Certin p'cells portions or Tracts of Land, Woods & Wood grounds wth appurtenances situate lying & being on the North side of the River of Agamenticus In New England, with diverse other priviledges in y^e s^d *Deeds* Expressed, . . . And w^r as y^e s^d Sa^mll Mavericke (241) & William Gefferys Gentl^e: one of the afores^d Pattentees by virtue of a *former Pattent* for the p^meses beareing Date y^e *first day of Decemb^r: 1631*: vnto them & other Pattentees Granted by the p'sident & Cou^ssell of New England, by there Deede (deed of Maverick & Jeffreys) written In paper under their hands and seals beareing Date the Eleventh day of June 1637; For the Considerations in y^e s^d deede expressed, Did give grant . . . to y^e aforesed Roger Gard . . . Certen p'cells of y^e s^d Land, (covered by the patent) the same to bee bounded & sett out by Willi: Hooke

Gentle: *One other of the s^d Pattentees* (of the Dec. 1, 1631 patent). And the said William Hooke on the *30th day of July 1637* (this date, it will be noticed, is prior to the confirmation or renewal (or patent, as Maverick calls it) of March 23, 1637-8): did bound and sett out the s^d p^cells of Land to the said Roger Gard Now these p^sents further Witnesseth that y^e aforesaid Sam^{ll} Mavericke for and in Consideration . . . grant bargan sell . . . vnto y^e s^d Roger Gard . . . Land neare the head of the Marsh bounded with the afores^d River on the West side, the Land of the afores^d River on the West side, the Land of the afores^d Willia: Hooke co^manly Called his farme on the South side & from thence Up to a Certon Oake Neare y^e River side marked for a bound on the North side, & from thence Northeast together with a moyety or one half deale of all the Marsh Ground lying between the farme house of the s^d Willia: Hooke, & the next poynt of Land oposite against it, being part of this last p^cell of Land now Granted to Roger Gard, & from Head of the s^d Marsh North East Joyning with the Land of the s^d Willia: Hooke, all the s^d severall p^cells of Land being bounded on the East side with the bounds of Agamenticus

(signed) Samuell Mavericke" (seal)

If the Agamenticus patentees concluded that the authority acquired by Sir Ferdinando Gorges as lord proprietor of the province required some recognition or confirmation of their rights from him, they may also have concluded that his authority in turn should have some formal recognition on the same document from the former officers of the Council. These points therefore would perhaps have been covered (or at least that may have been the supposition) by an endorsement on their patent (or by a separate instrument) to "confirme" the same, given under the seal of the Council, and the hand and seal of Sir Ferdinando Gorges. Maverick seems to have understood the "renewal" to have been a *new patent*, and his view was evidently shared by some of his associates here. In fact he apparently believed that the rights acquired under the 1631 patent had *lapsed*, even in face of a new patent (if that is what it was) which the Council records distinctly call a renewal of those rights. From his desire to obtain the confirmatory deed from Maverick we may conclude that Roger Gard viewed the matter in the same light. He depended upon the deed he had received on the 11th of June 1637, from Maverick and Jeffreys, their title being then based upon the patent of Dec. 1, 1631. The "renewal" of the 1631 patent was made *nine months later*, on the 23d of March 1637-38. This, from the point of view just outlined, probably made Gard feel doubtful about the title under his deed of the previous June.

In fixing a date (somewhat a matter of conjecture) for the assignment of the 1631 patent, by the majority of the patentees, to Hooke, Elbridge, Thomson, and others, it is fair to presume, I think, that Alderman Hooke would never have permitted his son to come to America, and take up his residence here, with any object in view less important than the furtherance of their mutual interests under this Agamenticus patent. With his wealth and influence he could easily have obtained a patent for any other point he might have desired. Patentees of his type were the very ones the Council was most anxious to enlist. I think we may safely conclude therefore that an assignment of the patent had been made before young Hooke left England—probably in March or April 1633—unless, as is quite possible (but in view of his youth not probable) he was sent here to view the country and judge of the outlook before investment was finally decided upon.

The assignment to which I have referred, made to Godfrey, Hooke, and others, of interest in the patent sealed Dec. 2, 1631, was probably negotiated by Edward Godfrey. He was the most active and persistent of the original settlers at Agamenticus, and was probably employed by Alderman Hooke and the others, at the suggestion of Sir Ferdinando Gorges (who was Alderman Hooke's neighbor, just across the street in Bristol), to purchase the interest of the majority of the original patentees (242). This conclusion seems to be supported by a statement made by Godfrey and attached to an instrument recorded in York Deeds VIII, 121, to wit:

Indenture of lease, June 27, 1638, between "Edward Godfrye of Agamenticus of the Province or reputed or intended Province of New Somerset in New England in America gentleman of the one party And William Hooke Citizen and Merchant of Bristol and now of Agamenticus afores^d of y^e other party." By said indenture Godfrey conveyed or sub-let to Hooke for nine hundred and ninety nine years, one third part of his interest in 1500 acres of land at Agamenticus near Cape Neddock which had been leased by Sir Ferdinando Gorges to him, and "Oliver Godfrye of Seale in y^e County of Kent Gent & to Richard Row of: y^e Sity of London Merchant."

Appended to this lease is the following:

"I Edward Godfrey do Acknowledge to have received of Humphry Hook for part of y^e Charge in procureing a pattent for Agamenticus (the other assignees of the 1631 patent probably paid the remaining part of his charge or commission for obtaining or negotiating the assignment made to them

by the majority of the original patentees—or perhaps it was the outlay incident thereto, though not probably part of the consideration) wherein *amongst others* is named for planters & vndertakers the s^d Humphry Hook as also William Hook Thomas Hook and Giles Elrige (Elbridge) & as in ful of all their part (the part of William Hooke, and his partners, if they were interested in the lease with him) of their Charges (the outlay of Edward and Oliver Godfrey and Richard Rowe) in procuring—the grant (—*lease* from Sir Ferdinando Gorges to the Messrs Godfrey and Rowe) for Cape nedock whereof one Third is assigned to Wm. Hook by this writing as within mentioned I Say rec^d for full Satisfaction thereof y^e Sum of Ten pounds witness my hand the 27th day of June 1638

me Edw^d Godfrey”

William² Hooke, son of William¹ Hooke above mentioned, of Salisbury, Feb’y 2, 1693-94, assigned all his “Right & Interest in this pattent (*sub-lease* from Godfrey) to Mr. James Coffin of Newbury” (his son-in-law), who assigned the same in equal shares to each of his daughters Jan’y 23, 1715. The said second William Hooke subsequently conveyed to his sons (as will appear later) the interest in the land remaining unsold at York formerly owned by his father in fee simple under the *Agamenticus patent*, which land had come to him by inheritance as “sole surviving son and heir.”

There is furthermore evidence to be found in his deed to his eldest son William³ Hooke, that he had conveyed land at York to his daughters Elizabeth (Cravath) and Eleanor (Greeley), but the deeds thereof do not appear to have reached the York records.

There are no records in existence to enable us to determine the exact date of the marriage of William Hooke and Eleanor Norton, the Lieutenant Colonel’s widow. We can however fix it approximately by saying that it occurred about 1636 or 1637. Two sons, William and Josiah, were born to them before their removal to Salisbury (Massachusetts Colony) in 1640. The “Old Norfolk records” (see Essex County Registry of Deeds at Salem) show the birth of Jacob, the third son, at Salisbury, “7th mo. 15th day, 1640,” or Sept. 15, 1640, O. S. It is possible that they had a daughter, also born to them at Agamenticus, and that she was Susanna Hooke who was married to Edward Darby 25th of January 1659, by Richard Bellingham, Dept. Governor.

As bearing upon the question of the birth of William Hooke’s children, the following depositions, to be found in York Deeds may be introduced here. They were given between fifty and sixty years

after the removal to Salisbury. That the occasion for them may be understood, it should be stated that the eldest son William went to England with his father and brother Josiah in 1650, and remained there some fifteen or eighteen years. Having reached maturity and married there before his return to America, and having on his return resided for twenty-five years or more in Salisbury, in the meantime conveying none of the land at York inherited from his father, it seems to have been considered necessary that he should produce evidence regarding his identity, in a case pending in the latter place between himself and Col. Elisha Hutchinson. Hence the depositions.

York Deeds, lib 8, fol 262. "This is to Testify unto whom it may Concern that I, Thomas Bradbury many years Ago Lived at Accomenticus now Called york At which time Mr. William Hooke lived At ye Same place & was Married and while I was there resident he had two Sons born (i.e.) Humphrey (?) & William after which ye s^d W^m went with his mother (father) for England being a pritty bigg lad and afterwards return^d Againe to New England & Came to his mother who then lived At Boston And I being with his mother At Boston She told me her Son W^m was Come home I then Saw him with her At Boston (he) being ye Same man who now lives here At Salisbury.

me Tho Bradbury

"I Mary Bradbury ye wife of s^d Tho: Bradbury went to Se M^{rs} Hook the wife of M^r W^m Hooke when she was Newly brought to bed of her Son W^m whom I then Suckled And this is that William Hooke which now lives at Salisbury"

Dated June 26, 1694.

Ibid, lib. 8, fol. 261. "Prescilla Johnson of York Aged About Eighty years Testifieth & Saith that Mr. William Hook deceased had Servants w^{ch} dwellt upon & Mannaged the farm now in Controversie between Coll^o Elisha Hutchinson & M^r William Hook Called Scotland in york & there kept a Stock of Cattle upon his farm Improveing both Meadow & upland for his Stock & use and Several Times while m^r Hookes Servants lived there I had been at ye farm in ye house with ye Serv^{ts} all was for the use of m^r Hook Dec^d And that ye s^d m^r Hook did at ye same time live in york and had two Sons born there Humfrey (?) Hooke & Wm Hook And it is about Sixty years agoe more or Less. m^{rs} Priscilla Johnson Came this 12th day of August 1699 made oath to ye above Written before me

Sam^l Donnell Just peace

Recorded According to ye Original January 8th 1717
Jos Ha^mond Reg^r" 8

Ibid, lib. 8, fol. 262. "This is to Testify unto whom it may Concern that I Henry Blasdall many years agoe living at Aguamenticus Now Called york

at which time Mr W^m Hook lived at y^e Same place and m^r Hook hired me to keep goats for him upon his Land Called Cape nedock Neck And I do remember he had one Son born there which was W^m Hook after which y^e said W^m Hook went for England being a pritty big lad & afterwards returned Again to New England And afterwards lived upon his fathers farm & Since have Sene him Severall Times & is y^e Same man who now Lives here at Salisbury.”

Dated Oct y^e 18, 1700.

Ibid, lib. 8, fols. 261, 262. The Deposition of John Eaton Aged about forty Eight years who Saith & Testifieth that being Employed by M^r W^m Hook (the son) of Salisbury about four & Twenty years ago to go to york in y^e Province of Maine to Mow a piece of Meadow And so to make it to hay which Meadow y^e s^d Hooke told me this s^d Depona^t that it was part of a farm of y^e s^d Hookes And I this Depona^t did goe Along with y^e s^d Hook to s^d york & did Cutt y^e s^d Meadow & make y^e hay & Sold it for y^e s^d Hookes benefits & did quietly Improve y^e s^d Meadow without any Let Trouble or Mollestation of any person but Severall Inhabitants of y^e s^d town of york Said it was m^r Hookes propper Estate or Land & further Saith not:” Dated y^e 3d day of July 1694.

Depositions of old people, having reference to events connected with their early days, have almost invariably proved to be at fault in some particular. In summing up the information contained in the first three depositions there would appear, from other evidence, to have been two errors of statement made. First, in giving the name Humphrey instead of Josiah for one of the boys, and secondly, in the statement that son William went to England with his *mother*, and by implication, with her only, instead of with his *father* and brother *Josiah*. Their grandfather, who had them with him when he made his will, may be presumed to have known what their names were, when he called them “William and Josias” in his will, and referred therein to “their brother Jacob.” That these deponents should have forgotten the Christian name of a child they had not seen for over fifty years, belonging to a family with which they were not allied, is hardly surprising. Probably Mr. Bradbury, then about eighty-four years of age, intended to say (unless his memory was at fault) that William went to England with his *father*, instead of his *mother*; or perhaps the magistrate who took down his statement misunderstood him. Probably Mrs. Johnson’s memory was refreshed(!) regarding the names of the boys by the statement previously made by Mr. Bradbury. Eaton and Blasdall appear to have been accurate in their statements, so far as can be judged. It is of course possible, and in fact *probable* that

there were *three* boys born at Agamenticus and that one of them (Humphrey the eldest) died in infancy.

The absence of all local records, if any ever existed, prior to 1639, leaves us a good deal in the dark regarding the first five or six years of William Hooke's life in this country. But from outside sources we get a glimmer here and there. A letter (243) from Rev. Hugh Peters (244) to John Winthrop, Jr. (245) may not be uninteresting at this point.

"Hugh Peters to John Winthrop Jr. (246)

Newes

Deerest Sir, We have a fishing ship come in hither of 200 tuns, the Master Mr King, She belongs to Mr. Hooke of Bristoll whose son dwells at Agamenticus, & married Capt: Norton's widdow, to whom his father hath sent 10 cowes, & not lost one by the way. Lesse than 10 weekes coming from Bristoll. All they say is that Capt. Raynsborough is come from Sally (247), brough(t) 140 slaves English, made a piece with the King of Morocco, beleagured it by land whilst ours did it by sea, & it was delivered by accord; 20 Morocco gallants came home to our King with presents; a great fleet gon for Argissa. Not a Turke (248) about our coasts. Some ships are making ready this way. Corne cheaper hear than in England.

Invoyce

Butter at 7d per lb.	Muscadine	6:6.
Cheese at 7d per lb.	Irish beefe the ton	50s.
Sack per gal. 6s.	Irish rugs	14s.

They are so deere wee shall not deale with them. Another ship is gone into Piscataway; they had the cold storme at sea. Boston men are thinking of Delawar bay. Mr. Prudden goes to Qvinipiak (249). Mr. Davenport (250) May sit down at Charlestown. Mr. Eaton (250) very ill of the skurvey. An eelepy. Angells appeare at Boston. Be secret. Your sister Symonds recovering. Berdall hath buryed his wife. Another eelepy. Wee have tomorrow morning Jiggells (251) going to your governour laden with wood; some dred of the frost at Boston. I wish you were here to goe with vs to Boston 2d day. Salute your wife from vs.

I am you know H:P

I pray you pay Samuel Greenfield 10s for mee. He is of your towne & will come to you."

Although I have not positively determined the parentage of William Hooke's wife, I think, as already intimated, that before her first marriage she was Eleanor Knight, sister of Robert Knight of Bristol, and furthermore that she was probably a daughter of Edward (the elder) or Mathew Knight, and a niece of the wife of

Robert Aldworth. I reach this conclusion in part from certain New England records. From an entry in Suffolk Deeds (Boston) lib. 1, fol. 117, which I have already quoted in part, I find that "William Hooke of Salisbury," under date of March 15, 1649, sold "vnto Samuel Benet of Lin all that vpland w^{ch} was given to him by arbitration betwixt Tho. Dexter & him or his ffather Humphry Hooke . . . warranting the same from his ffather Humphry Hooke his brother Wm. Hooke Robt. Knight or their heires" etc.

(signed) "Wm Hooke & a seale"

As the above is written in the third person, it is hardly necessary to say it is an abstract only. Our earlier registry entries were not usually verbatim copies of the originals, hence the forms of expression, the spelling, etc., are the registrar's (252). William Aspinwall, who succeeded Stephen Winthrop in 1644, was the registrar in this case. The expression "his brother Wm Hooke Robt. Knight," I presume, results from the registrar's effort (apparently unnecessary) to avoid confusion consequent upon the introduction of the possessive pronoun after the name Humphrey Hooke; the intention, I think, having been to convey the idea which we should convey in saying: His (William Hooke's) brother Robert Knight.

However this may be, I fail to make sense of the clause except by concluding that William Hooke called Robert Knight his brother, meaning of course his brother-in-law. Now as none of his sisters married Robert Knight, the latter must have been Mrs. William Hooke's brother, and her name therefore, before her first marriage, as it would seem, was Eleanor Knight.

The record in Essex Deeds (Salem) of another conveyance by William Hooke supports my interpretation of the clause in the Suffolk registry, and appears to settle the matter conclusively.

Essex Deeds (253), book 3, page 81-261, William Hooke sells to "Georg Keaser of Lyn in New England . . . seaventy acres of Salt marsh meddow . . . which was lately in y^e hands of Thomas Dexter, . . . further I William Hooke doe ingage myselfe to defend & keep Georg Keaser, heirs executors & assigns, from all lett troubles mollestations which any waye may arise from my father, brother Robert Knight, or my heirs executors or assigns, or any p'sons whatsoe ever, from by or under mee, or any of them." Dated July 1, 1647. Recorded 2:4m^o: 70 (June 2, 1670).

It should be remembered that although the settlers at Massa-

chusetts Bay were Puritans, those in the Province of Maine were for the most part Episcopalians, Thornton says: "Maine was distinctively Episcopalian, and intended as a rival to her Puritan neighbors." The fact that Episcopalian settlements were in the process of successful establishment in their near neighborhood, was naturally regarded by the Puritans as a menace of the first magnitude, when viewed in the light of their recent experience in England (254). It is not therefore surprising that they looked upon Gorges, the Lord Proprietor of the Eastern settlements, as the embodiment of all those influences or forces most dangerous to their future peace of mind, and most likely to disturb, if not prevent the permanent establishment in New England of the Puritan Commonwealth they had at heart. They were, in consequence, not only lacking in sympathy for the trials and tribulations of their eastern neighbors, but did all in their power to discourage and impede the growth of the settlements over which Gorges held Proprietorship, and to that end even disputed his right to any authority in the country. Taking advantage of the indefiniteness in the matter of boundary, to which criticism all the grants were open, they exorbitantly enlarged the boundaries of their own grant; less perhaps with any hope of establishing their right to the same, than with the design of discouraging settlements outside their own undoubted jurisdiction, since new-comers, and those inclined to remove, were less likely to locate in disputed territory than elsewhere. Reference to the action of the Massachusetts people in this respect appears in Mr. Deane's copy of records of the Council for New England. The Council in their address to the King say: "Robert Gorges' servants & certain other undertakers & tenants belonging unto some of Us . . . were all thrust out by these Indenders that had exorbitantly bounded their grant from East to West through all the main-(land) from Sea to Sea, being near about 3000 miles in length, withall riding over the heads of all those Lords & others that had their Porcons assigned unto them in his late Ma^{ts} presence & with his Highnes approba^{on}." How, at this period, prior to the civil war, the Massachusetts colonists could have hoped to establish their contention is not of course very clear. They probably had no such anticipation at that time, unless they were wiser in their day and generation than would seem probable. They doubtless had other motives. Their uniform treatment of Gorges appears to have been far from friendly, notwithstanding

his action towards them would seem to have been kindly and generous (255). In fact "to him, the Puritans, both of Plymouth and Massachusetts were in the main indebted for *their* charter, and the *former* deserves the credit of having made a grateful acknowledgement of his kindness, and the services he had rendered to the country" (256). Great was "the consternation of the Massachusetts authorities" therefore, upon finding, in 1635, that the King had appointed Gorges governor over all the New England colonies. A copy of the Royal commission to Gorges is upon the records of the Council for New England. I here give the following transcript recorded upon the books of the Council under date of the "26th of Aprill, 1635."

"By the King.

Manifesting our Royall pleasure for y^e Establishing a Gen^l Governm^t in our territory of New England for preventing of those evils that otherwise might ensue for y^e default thereof . . . We have seriously advised with our Counsell both of the way of reformation (of existing abuses) & of the p^rson meet & able for an Employment of that nature, by whose gravity, Moderation, & experience, we have hopes to repair what is amisse, . . . & for that purpose we have resolved with our self to employ o^r servant S^r Ferdinando Gorges, Knt., as well for that our gracious father of blessed memory as we have had of long time good experience of his fidelity, circumspection, (etc.) . . . Wee hold it a property of our Princely care to second him wth o^r Royal & ample authority. . . . The Earl of Arundell with the Sec^ry Windebanke to deliver the Great Seal to S^r Ferd: Gorges."

This authority the Massachusetts people were disposed to dispute, resist, or ignore, as circumstances warranted; but Gorges seems to have made little, or no effort in the exercise of his newly acquired power either to control or restrain them—certainly not in any violent or arbitrary manner. Upon receiving his share of the division made by the Council for New England, in 1635, he sent over his nephew, Captain William Gorges, to be governor over the territory extending from the Piscataqua to the Sagadahock, which he was then entitled to call his own special province, and to which he gave the name of New Somersetshire. A government was established and a court held at the house of Captain Bonython at Saco on the 25th of March 1636. In the settlement of some disputes by this court George Cleeves of "Spurwink" considered himself aggrieved, and at once left for England determined to bring vengeance upon the heads of the governor and the Saco authorities. He returned the next year with a writ from the

“Starr Chamber Office” commanding certain members of the Saco court and others “to appear at the counsell table” to answer his supposed wrongs (257). Captain Gorges, accompanied by Edward Godfrey, then went to England to state their side of the case. Mr. Cleeves must have pleaded his side with considerable eloquence, for he “persuaded Sir Ferdinando Gorges to discharge all his commissioners and commit the government of New Somersetshire to Sir Henry Vane, Winthrop and others with whom Cleaves himself was joined. But on the arrival of Capt. Gorges with letters from Vines and his friends Sir Ferdinando saw that he had been misled and wrote forthwith on the 29th of August to Vane and the other Massachusetts men, asking them to reinstate Vines as deputy Governor with fit associates, including Francis Champernoon, a nephew of Gorges, then living on the Piscataqua” (258). Richard Vines, in writing to Gov. Winthrop, under date of Jan’y. 25, 1640, says: “Three or 4 yeares since Mr Cleives, being in England, procured a writ out of the Starr Chamber office to command Mr. Edward Godfrey, Mr. John Winter, Mr. Purches, and myselfe to appear at the Counsell table; to answer some supposed wrongs, Mr. Godfrey went over to answeare for himselfe,—& out of the same Court brings a writ to command Cleives to pay unto him 20^{li} for his charges, which he refuses to doe. Now Sr. Fferdinando Gorges gave me order to see Mr Godfrey have right in this case.—I humbly intreate your advise herein, what course is to be taken, that I may free my selfe from blame and the malice of Cleives, who is a ffire brand of dissention, and hath sett the whole Province together by the yeares.” Mr. Cleeves was evidently a man of great pugnacity, and it is perhaps due to him that this quality is somewhat characteristic of his distinguished descendant, the Hon. Thomas B. Reed of Maine, late Speaker of the National House of Representatives.

Cleeves having returned from England in 1637 with the writ from the Star Chamber, and the order from Gorges to the authorities of Massachusetts Bay, “to govern,” in the words of Winthrop (259), “his province of New Somersetshire,” and “to oversee his servants and private affairs,” met with discomfiture, as “Gov. Winthrop and the other gentlemen of Mass. Bay, to whom the commission of Gorges was addressed, declined executing his wishes, *professing to be ignorant of his right to the government of the Province*” (260). As they would not acknowledge his authority over their own colony, or even over his province of New Somer-

setshire, they were of course obliged to decline the commission brought by Cleeves, since its acceptance was opposed to their contention, and would have been equivalent to an admission of the right of Gorges to governorship in the "territory of New England" as the Royal Commission expresses it.

Captain William Gorges, the first governor of New Somersetshire, held office during the year 1636-37, and from the beginning of the new year 1637, until July of that year when he went to England, accompanied by Godfrey, to disprove the representations made by Cleeves, leaving Richard Vines as his deputy in charge of the government. As William Gorges did not return and as the Massachusetts authorities declined the invitation from Sir Ferdinando Gorges to administer affairs in his province (a commission, as we have seen, almost immediately revoked for reasons not prompted by the refusal of Winthrop and his associates to accept the trust), Vines (as deputy governor) continued his administration until the beginning of the new year, on the 25th of March 1638, when William Hooke became the governor, his term continuing for two years, and expiring on the 24th of March 1639-40. As Thomas Gorges, the new governor who succeeded William Hooke, had not arrived on the 25th of March 1640 (the beginning of the new year), it is probable that Mr. Hooke continued his administration for a somewhat longer period, as we find his name attached to an instrument of record, bearing a date as late as the 29th of June 1640, in which he styles himself "Governor," Richard Vines subscribing to the same statement made in the body of the instrument. The name of Thomas Gorges appears in the same document without prefix or affix other than Esq^r.

The following references to Governor Hooke during his term of office appear upon the records:

York Deeds. Book VI, page 74:

"This writing witnesseth that I, William Hooke *now Governour*, of Accomenticus in New England, and one of y^e Pattentees of that Plantation, for and in consideration of a Marriage heretofore solemnized between Henry Simson of Accomenticus aforesaid And Jane y^e Daughter and heir of Walter Norton Lieutenant Collonel / Sometime a Pattentee of this Plantation, but now Deceased, as also for Divers other good causes and considerations me hereto moving. Have Given, Granted and confermed And by these presents doe give grant and confirm to the afores^d Henry Simson his heirs and Assignes, on p'cell of Land in Accamenticus aforesaid / Bounded with y^e land of Roger Gard lately set out by me y^e s^d William Hooke And Samuel

Maverick one other of y^e Pattentees on the North side of y^e River Accomenticus. . . . To have and to hold y^e aforesaid land with th'apurtences to y^e said Henry Simson his heirs and Assigns for ever, the said Henry Simson Yielding paying and performing to our Sovereign Lord the Kings Ma^{tie} all Such Rents and reservations as in y^e Pattent for this Plantation are Expressed. In witness I y^e said William Hooke have hereunto set my hand & Seal the thirteenth day of March in y^e fourteenth day of y^e Reign of our Sovereign Lord King Charles.

Anno Domi, 1638

Sealed and Delivered
In the presents of
William Tompson
Delivery
Roger Gard

William Hooke (his seal)
memoran^d that these two lines were
enterlined before Sealing and
hereof.

A true Copie of the originall Transcribed and compared Decembr 23d 1700
Jos. Ha^mond Regist^r"

York Deeds. Book VI, page 150:

"I Richard Vines Steward Gen^{ll} unto S^r fardinando Gorges K^t L^d propriet^r of the Province of Mayn doe give and Grant unto Henry Simpson his heires and assignes for ever ten Acres of marsh land upon y^e south side of the river Accomenticus opposit against y^e ffarm of *Wm Hook Gover*: Yeelding and paying for y^e Premisses two shillings yearly upon y^e 29 day of Septembr unto y^e s^d fardinando Gorges his heires and assignes /

In witness whereof I y^e afores^d Rich^d Vines in y^e behalf of y^e s^d S^r fardinando Gorges have hereunto set my hand this 28th day of May 1640.

Witness; Wi^{ll} Hooke /

Rich: Vines

Possession & Seizen of y^e Land within mentioned was delivered to y^e wth in named Henry Simpson by *Thomas Gorges Esq^r* the 29th day of June 1640—In y^e p^rsence of *Wm Hooke Govern^r* and Rich^d Cornish.

A true Copie of the original Transcribed & compared July: 6: 1702

Jos: Ha^mond Reg^r"

In this document drawn by Vines, who styles himself steward general, we find William Hooke called governor. The manner in which the name of "Thomas Gorges Esq^r" is introduced shows that the latter had not then (June 29, 1640) assumed the position of deputy governor. He must therefore have been inaugurated after that date.

Probably the 29th of June 1640 was very nearly the exact date of Thomas Gorges' first appearance at Agamenticus. Although William Hooke had not then surrendered his government into the hand of Gorges, who was to be his immediate successor (261),

he had doubtless already removed his live stock and personal effects (262) to his new home at Salisbury, in the Massachusetts colony, where he was living two weeks later, and from whence on the 15th of July, 1640, he wrote to Gov. Winthrop.

The following is taken from *Edward Godfrey's* letter to *Governor Winthrop* dated February 10, 1639-40.

"It is not vnknowne the many difficulties I have vndergone in the infancy of this plantation, now brought to som perfection. It is likely to suffer except you put to your helping hand." He then speakes of *William Hook*, of Agamenticus, *as then governor*, and that he by "large promise of accomodation, is determined to leave vs, and I thinke for Nubury, I presume vnknowne to you." He then proceeds: "*The favorable aspecte his father hath cast one him, vs and the country in generall, you have seene, hee being the cheafe pattentee heere, and to my knowledge resolueth to settle it, as now he hath fayrly begune.* But if our governor in the time of his government should (leave) vs distracted, and before his going home to see his parents, whose presence they (very) much desyre, it may eclipse all this light, and this place may fayll to factions. Both myne and others humble request is, you would be pleased to wright those at Nubury to forebeare their soelisatations, and that you would bee pleased to wright our governor privately, not rashly, and, soe suddenly to leave vs, a people whose hartes ar soe set in reall affections one him, and to stay out this time of government."

Rev. Mr. Felt, who first published (263) the above extract from Edward Godfrey's letter to Gov. Winthrop, appears to have been the only historical writer, so far as I have observed, who has taken any particular notice of these evidences regarding Mr. Hooke's official position in the eastern province. The references in York Deeds have probably either been overlooked or misunderstood by all writers and investigators, and were not referred to by Mr. Felt.

Mr. Godfrey's supposition that Governor Winthrop was uninformed in regard to Mr. Hooke's proposed removal was a mistake. Mr. Godfrey was the one who had been kept in the dark as will appear by the following:

LETTER FROM GOVERNOR HOOKE TO GOVERNOR WINTHROP (264)

"To the Worshipfull John Winthrop, Gover: be dd, in Boston.

Worshipfull Sir,—Vnderstan(d)i(n)g that Mr. Winslowe and some other Gent: heth power from your worshipp to grant out lottes at Merimake to newe commers; Sir, if you shall thinke it fitt to lett me have a portion of land in that plantation, I will remove, and about June next to bild there. I have written vnto Mr. Wineslowe allredy about it, expecting an answer

every daye, that I maye order my bisnesse accordenly for my remouall. I desier noe great quantities of land, but that I maye have that which is sufficient for the manigine of that estate which I have. I have fead my selfe a longe time with v(a)ine hopes. *There is noe possibility here with vs for the geathering of a church* (265), except God in mercy open there eyes, and lett them see there supersticious waye which they desier to goe. Sir, desireing your Worshipp to helpe this poore man the be(a)rer here of, which haeth bine much damnified by the master of Gallope's pinnas, Sir, I leave the matter vnto the party to relate vnto your worshipp. To my knowled(ge) (he) haeth caried himself here amongst vs verie shamefully (the master—and Gallope's sonne twoe), inuited some of our naybours aborde his pinnas and mad(e) them drunke (266), and drunke themselves twoe. He haeth not yet answered for it, but some stand bound for them. I rest, leaueing your worshipp to the Lords protecktion.

Yours to command

Willi. Hooke

Accomenticus, the 28 January 1639.

Sir, if I might not be to troublesome vnto your worshipp, desiring an answer by the first."

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Hooke of Acomenticus."

Agamenticus, and the eastern settlements generally, suffered at this time, somewhat, not only from their distance from each other, and from the more thickly settled Puritan colony, but undeniably also from a lack of sympathy with their undertakings displayed by their Puritan neighbors, arising from the differences upon ecclesiastical questions to which I have already referred. The religious question with the Puritan was the paramount one, the idea of material gain, at first being secondary. The promoters of the Eastern settlements were, as we have seen, Episcopalians, and as far as the religious question was uppermost in their minds, their colonies were no doubt intended to be rivals of the Puritan colony, though perhaps not to the extent that the Puritans believed, for the latter may be said to have been animated by a singleness of purpose which the former did not possess.

The eastern patentees were either merchants interested in commercial enterprises, chiefly connected with the fisheries, or others seeking for gain from the ownership of mines of gold and silver, or power and profit from the possession of large landed estates. So far as the eastern settlers were merchants or traders, they found the field for their operations somewhat restricted. The Puritans naturally dealt with them grudgingly; and as no valuable ores were found, and as they probably required for their own use

all they raised from the soil, they had little, except from the fisheries, to send to England in the way of exchange for what was or might have been sent to them by their associates at home. This at first could hardly have been otherwise; and later, in the near future, might and probably would have been remedied to some extent by an effort, on the part of the more wealthy patentees, at colonization on a much larger scale than before. We have seen by Mr. Godfrey's letter to Governor Winthrop that this effort was on the point of being made for *Agamenticus* by Alderman Hooke. Godfrey says that "hee (Alderman Hooke) being the cheefe pattentee heere—to my knowledge *resolueth to settle it*, as now he hath fayrly begune." But the civil war in England broke out directly or very shortly after this and of course put an end to any such good intentions. In fact during that very year (1640) the civil troubles in England had reached such a point that restrictions were being exercised of a nature to thwart all such enterprises (267).

During the next few years Bristol was rent with dissensions, and was suffering from war, pestilence and famine. The old knight Sir Ferdinando Gorges was seized by the Parliamentarians and cast into prison. He died in 1647. From 1642 until the close of the first of the civil wars the city was in frequent peril from one or the other of the contending forces, and was beseiged, captured and garrisoned by the opposing armies alternately. In 1645, 3000 people died in Bristol of the plague. Her commerce was hampered or temporarily destroyed, and her shipping embargoed; while her merchants, although contributing liberally to the side they individually sympathized with, were levied upon for money and supplies by their opponents—the Parliamentary forces making reprisal upon those who were for the King, and the Royalist army, when in possession, upon those who were for the Parliament.

The Bristol residence of Sir Ferdinando Gorges on St. Augustine's Back (the recent site of Colston's school) was opposite Alderman Hooke's house on the Quay, being separated therefrom by the river Frome, a stream hardly wider than a street or canal (268), and crossed by a bridge at Frome-gate just above. It is probable that Mr. Hooke's interest in the *Agamenticus* undertaking was originally solicited by Sir Ferdinando, who seems to have been indefatigable in his efforts at colonization, and who

doubtless looked upon his wealthy and enterprising neighbor as a most desirable person to help him in his undertakings. Sir Ferdinando admits that his estate had been greatly impaired by his previously unsuccessful colonial enterprises, and he no doubt made a supreme effort in this last venture to associate himself with people of ample means and enterprise, that the success of his undertaking might be the more readily assured. The civil war however proved a severe blow to his undertaking, and practically defeated his efforts. It is possible however that Mr. Hooke's efforts towards colonizing in New England would have stopped, even if the civil war had not occurred, in view of his son's removal to Salisbury, and evident identification with Puritanism, which latter circumstance, as will appear, was not at all to the Alderman's taste.

In the mean time, to William Hooke, who styles himself merchant, and who was educated to that profession, the immediate outlook at Agamenticus must have been discouraging (269). He probably thought there was a better field for his enterprise in the Puritan colony, and so applied, as we have seen, for a grant there. But we are compelled, by his own testimony in the letter last quoted, to conclude that another motive was chiefly influential in prompting that step. He seems to have had a strongly religious turn of mind. In this, however, he can hardly be said to have been peculiar, since that inclination was particularly characteristic of most of his New England contemporaries, and of the English community out of which he came. Now, however much the English patentees may have had the establishment of Episcopacy at heart, they had, as we have seen, as yet done, or succeeded in in doing, but little for Agamenticus in the way of spiritual advisers. The settlers there, left to themselves, made an effort to get Mr. Blackstone to come to them from Boston. The latter, who was perhaps as much an Episcopalian as a Puritan, appears at first to have looked favorably upon the proposition, but he finally concluded not to accept the call. This want of success, added to the failure of his subsequent effort, which included the anticipated co-operation of Governor Winthrop, and the slight encouragement he received from the townspeople in general in his attempt to establish a congregation at Agamenticus, doubtless increased Mr. Hooke's desire to remove, and finally proved the chief factor in determining that step.

Among the papers of Governor Winthrop preserved and published by the Massachusetts Historical Society, is the following letter which throws some light upon the condition of Agamenticus from the religious standpoint in 1637, and gives a good idea of the feelings of Mr. Hooke and some few of his neighbors upon this subject.

LETTER OF WILLIAM HOOKE AND THOMAS BRADBURY TO
GOV^R WINTHROP (270)

"To the Right Worshipfull John Winthrop Esq^r Governour of the Masichewsetts these present be dd in Baye.

Wee have found it written (Right Worshipfull) that where noe vision is the people perrish; the consederation where of forceth vs to become humble sutours to your worship, to solícite in our behalfe some godly minister, to pittie the miserable estate and condicion wee are in, for want of those blessed meanes which the Lord hath appointed to the fortherance of our saluation; hoping he will stirre vp your heart with all conuenient speede to supply (out of your abundance) vs poore people heere, whoe are almost starued for want of the Spirituall foode of our soules. We shall not neede to vse many arguments to moue you, whoe canne better apprehend our misery than wee express itt. Maye it please you, Mr. Blackstone (271) haeth formerly promised to come and liue with vs, but wee nowe finde by his answers to some, that his hopes are fedd with the expectation of farre greater profit by his husbandry there, than hee should have had by his ministry here; which God only knows. Nowe, Sir, for the accomodation of a minister, thus farr wee canne goe at present; he shall haue a very good howse, with an inclosure to it, for the planting of corne; and allsoe a stip(end) of 20 £i per annum, which wee hope in a short time wilbe doubled, if not trebled. Neather will wee seeke to tye him to any other manor of dissipline than what shalbe found approueable out of (the) word of God, which must be the touchstone and triall of all our actions. Good Sir, lett not any former Scandals which may have beene (partly just and partly vniust) raysed vpon vs be any obstaclee to hinder the good and proffitt, which by this means may through Gods blessinge betide our poore soules heere after. What wee have spoken, vouchsafe to take into your serious consederation, and effectually answer vs by the ferst opportunity; soe shall wee praye for a continual increse of Gods favour towards you in derecting all your accions to his glory, to home wee leaue & rest

Your humble suppliants ever to command

William Hooke
Thomas Bradbury"

Accomenticus the 13th day of September,
Anno 1637

Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, "Mr. Hooke, Mr. Bradbury,
Agamenticus: 13: Sept: 1637."

The Massachusetts settlers were getting "food for their souls" in abundance, and Mr. Hooke's hunger for something of that description, which his letters indicate, and the practical monopoly of the field which the Puritans possessed, probably led, if it did not in a sense compel him (although he had been educated an Episcopalian) to look favorably upon Puritanism—sufficiently so in fact to have largely influenced his removal to Salisbury, and to have enabled him, after his removal, to become a Puritan by profession; since his oath of allegiance taken Sept. 12, 1640, and his representation of the settlement at the General Court implied membership in a Puritan church. The fact that Thomas Bradbury, who joined Mr. Hooke in writing to Gov. Winthrop in 1637, also joined him in removing to Salisbury in 1640, would seem to indicate that the religious question was the one which chiefly influenced each of them in taking that step.

It is possible that the history of New England might have been written somewhat differently from that with which we are familiar had the civil war in England never occurred. The rivalry of the Eastern colonies, which the Puritans feared, would in that case, doubtless, have become very formidable in view of the influential backing they possessed, and the financial and other support they were about to receive, and the consequences might have been somewhat different from what we have seen. The success of the Puritans was attracting the attention of the more wealthy and influential members of the strictly commercial class to the possibilities which systematic colonization, in the eastern and other rival provinces, offered; and Gorges was just beginning to see the probability of some satisfactory results from his long continued, and hitherto unprofitable efforts. In 1639 he obtained a charter from the King confirming the grant of the council, which directed that the territory "shall forever hereafter be called or named the Province or Countie of Maine"; and in preparation for what he believed to be at hand, he mapped out "a magnificent" scheme of government, which only appears absurd and pretentious because circumstances, which could not then have been anticipated, prevented the consummation of plans which might otherwise have been carried out as designed.

"More ample powers were never bestowed on a British subject," than were accorded to Gorges by this charter. "Powers of government were conferred almost absolute. . . . Such powers were

never before granted by any government to any individual' (272). Under the new charter "he was made Lord Palatine, with the same power and privileges as the Bishop of Durham, in the County Palatine of Durham. This charter conferred upon the venerable knight a high degree of feudal authority," with "an unlimited power of appointment to office . . . and he immediately proceeded to reorganize his jurisdiction in the province" (273). After maturing his plan of government, he "proceeded, on the 2d of Sept. 1639, to appoint his officers, and granted a commission at that time to Sir Thomas Jocelyn, Richard Vines, Esq., his steward general, Francis Champernoon, Esq., his nephew, Henry Jocelyn and Richard Bonighton, Esq. rs., William Hooke and Edward Godfrey, Gents., as councellors, for the due execution of justice in the province; and established in the same commission certain ordinances (274) for their regulation. . . . Another commission was issued the 10th of March following, in which the name of Thomas Gorges, whom he styles his cousin, is substituted for Sir Thomas Jocelyn, but similar in other respects to the former (275). Bourne says (276): This board "had perhaps more judicial stamen than any which followed it in the Seventeenth Century." Willis says: "This was an able board. . . . They comprised not only an executive council for the province, . . . but a court for the trial of criminal offences," and "all differences arrising between party and party. . . . Their power also embrased admiralty and probate jurisdiction" (277). The court, says Folsom, "was holden in the name of Sir Ferdinando Gorges, Knight, Lord Proprietor of the Province of Mâine. . . . The paramount authority of the crown, seems scarsely to have been recognized. The style of the judicial proceedings supposed the presence of the lord proprietor." This, Cleves, in a certain case, pleaded "a promise made unto him by you, Sir F. Gorges" (278).

The first book of "Records" at York, Maine, has the following entry:

Book A					
	Sir Ferdinando Gorge by Commission appoints				
	S ^r Thomas Josselin, Knight				
	Richard Vines, Steward General	}	Councellors		
Sep ^r 2 ^d 1639	Francis Champernoon			}	Esq'rs
	Henry Josselin				
	Richard Bonighton				
	Willm. Hooke	}	Gents.		
	Edward Godfrey				

	Thomas Gorges	} Councillors.
	Richard Vynes, Steward General	
March 10	Henry Josselin	
1639-40	Francis Champernoon	
	Richard Bonithon	
	William Hooke	
	Edward Godfrey, Esq'rs	

Referring to Sir Ferdinando Gorges, Palfrey (279) says: "He appointed his son (?) Thomas Gorges (280) to be Deputy-Governor of his domain, with six persons, residents on the spot, for Councillors who were severally to fill the offices of *Secretary, Chancellor, Field-Marshal, Treasurer, Admiral, and Master of Ordinance*, were jointly to constitute a Supreme Court of Judicature, to meet every month, and to be served by a Registrar, and a Provost-Marshal. To form a legislature, eight Deputies, 'to be elected by the feeholders of the several counties,' were to be associated with the councillors. Each county was to have its court, consisting of a lieutenant and eight justices, to be appointed by the council. The province was divided into two counties, one of which Agamenticus, or York, was the principal settlement; and the other Saco. The annual General Courts were appointed to be held at the latter place, while the former was distinguished both by being the residence of the Deputy-Governor, and by the dignity of incorporation as a borough under the hand of the Lord Proprietary himself" (281).

I am not informed as to how these offices were respectively allotted (except in the case of the Deputy Governorship) but I presume from the order in which the names were given in the commission and in which they are entered upon the book of records, that Gorges had assigned to Mr. Hooke the position of "Admiral." If so, we may consider him to have been the first person in America to whom that title was given by formal commission. Mr. Hooke was, so far as I am able to judge, the only member of the board entitled by royal permission to act, in the place of birth, as a merchant trading on the high seas, and therefore, perhaps, the best, if not the only one on the commission, qualified for the position. By the charter granted to the Society of Merchant Venturers in the City of Bristol by Edward IV, in force when Mr. Hooke was born, and renewed by Charles I (7th of January 1638), it was decreed, as more fully stated elsewhere, "that none should

practise the art (or mystery) of merchandise (beyond the seas) in the City of Bristol, except such as were admitted into the said society, or otherwise apprenticed, or had used the mystery for seven years" (282). That is, "those who claim to be admitted by apprenticeship must have served a Merchant Venturer for seven years in a merchantile capacity" (283). But "*every son of a Merchant Venturer*, born after his father became a member, is entitled by birth, after taking up his freedom of the city, to be admitted into the society of merchants. No necessary qualification exists with respect to the trade or profession actually exercised by him" (284). As Mr. Humphrey Hooke was a prominent member of the society in Bristol, his son William became entitled to and undoubtedly received admission into the society, for we find the latter's son William (grandson of Humphrey), who in the mean time had been a resident of Bristol some seventeen or eighteen years, under date of May 3, 1669, calling himself merchant, and selling salt marsh granted by the town (Salisbury, Mass.) to his father, whom he calls merchant "some time of y^e same town butt now deceased" (285). Edward Godfrey, having previously had charge of the public stores, was probably "Master of the Ordnance."

Sir Ferdinando Gorges, in his "Brief Narration," says, under head of:

"The manner and form of the Government I have established for the ordering of the public affairs within my Province of Maine,

First, in my absence I assigned one for my Lieutenant or Deputy, to whom I adjoined a Chancellor for the determination of all differences between party and party, for meum and tuum; only next to him I ordained a Treasurer for the receipt of the public revenue; to them I added a Marshal for the managing of the melitia, who hath for his Lieutenant a Judge-Marshal and other officers of the Marshal Court; where is to be determined all criminal and capital matters, with other misdemeanors or contentions for matter of honor and the like. These I appointed an Admiral, with his lieutenant or Judge, for the ordering and determining of maritime causes, either within the Province, or on the seas, or in foreign parts, so far as concerns the inhabitants, and their factors, or servants, as is usual here in England. Next I ordered a Master of the Ordnance, whose office is to take charge of all the public stores belonging to the melitia both for sea and land; to this I joined a Secretary, for the public service of myself and Council. These are the standing Councillors."

At, or about this point in the Drama of the Royal Province of Maine, the situation there, owing to the occurrence of the civil war in England, might be likened to that state of affairs which would naturally follow the breaking out of a conflagration in a theatre during the performance or rehearsal of a play. As a parallel to the situation there we should have at least in the latter case an equally unfortunate state of affairs, which may appear more suggestive if we should assume that the catastrophe happens during a performance designed to illustrate the development, and finally triumphant success of Sir Ferdinando's colonial enterprise—that happy condition of things in the eastern province which its promoters designed, and under favoring circumstances might have brought to pass. A kind of anti-climax is reached. The actors have suffered no personal injury, but their theatrical properties, their financial backing, and their royal support are gone. The performance is indefinitely postponed. The actors have become strolling players, and must take up other occupations or scatter to their English homes as best they may. A neighboring religious community, having the material at hand for building a church, have presently taken possession of the land on which the theatre stood.

The Massachusetts people, who had previously most conveniently enlarged the boundaries of their grant, were not long, after the triumph of their friends under Cromwell, in entering upon and taking possession of the Province of Maine (286), and coercing, as some express it, the submission of its inhabitants to their authority. Some resistance was made, but it was chiefly confined to a matter of protest, since anything more than that would have been useless, with the Puritans "on tap" both in England and in this country. No resident having a grant or an acre of land was dispossessed. Jurisdiction only over the province was demanded and exercised, and that meant that certain disabilities thenceforth existed for all who were not Puritans—Episcopalians, Quakers and others were to find a residence elsewhere more to their convenience and better for their prospects (287). Some like Godfrey remained for a time; others like Vines went to Barbodoes. Many returned to England, or went to some of the royal colonies at the South.

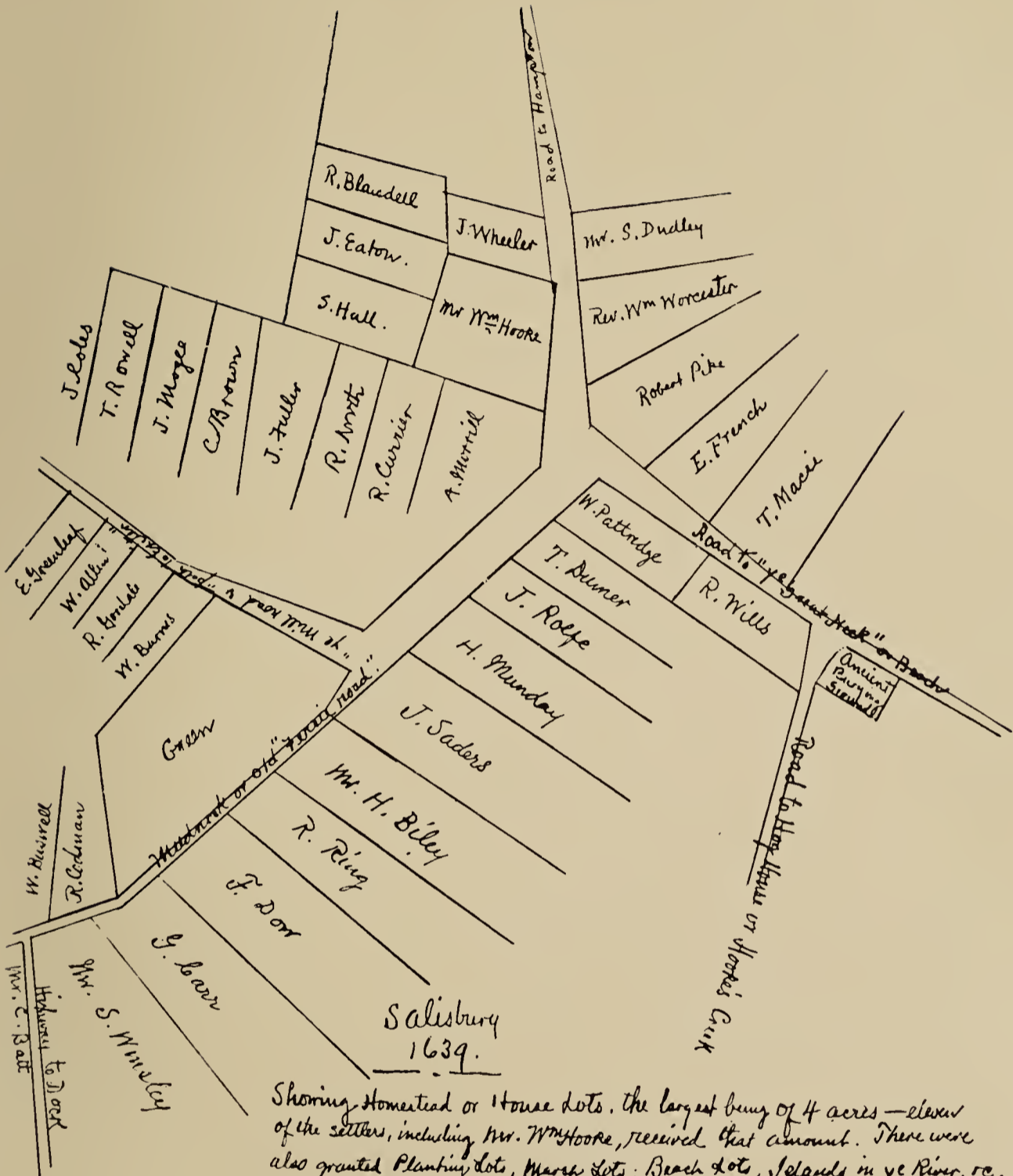
William Hooke, however, had already taken up his residence in the Puritan colony, in what is now the town of Salisbury, the

new settlement at or near the mouth of the Merrimac river, opposite that part of Newbury, now Newburyport. Permission was given Sept. 6, 1638 "to begin a plantation at Merrimack," with power to add to their number. We find the settlement called Merrimack in May 1639, but on the 4th of Sept. following it was ordered to be called Colchester. The name however was finally changed to Salisbury at a meeting of the General Court held on the 7th of October 1640. The earliest list in existence of the settlers there, a copy of which is to be found in the Massachusetts archives, contains thirty-seven names. Mr. Samuel Dudley (son of Governor Thomas Dudley) heads the list, followed by Mr. William Hooke, Mr. William Worcester (the minister), Mr. Christopher Batt, and Mr. Samuel Winsley, in the order named. The next list which appears, as given in the Salisbury records, shows that the number of families had been increased to sixty-nine. Several of the original, and more influential members, including Mr. Hooke, went back to England after a time and never returned. As regards the quality of its members, this was one of the most eminently respectable of the early settlements. The list of thirty-seven contains no less a number than eleven, or about thirty per cent of the whole, who were distinguished by the title of "Mr." Hutchinson estimates the average number of freemen, in the different towns, distinguished by that title as not over four or five per cent of the whole.

In the early town records we find the following: On the 5th of the 11th mo. 1642, at a meeting of the freemen, it was "ordered that those persons underwritten shall be accounted townsmen and none others, Mr. William Worster (the minister), Mr. Samuel Dudley, Edward French, Richard Wells, William Patridge, Robert Pyk, Mr. William Hooke, Ralph Blazdale."

6th 11th mo. 1644. Ordered that Samuel Hall pay five shillings for his abusive speeches against the freemen, saying "You are all lords, all monarchs. Your will must be law," and the like.

Mr. Hooke's landed interests at Agamenticus, including those of his father, brother, and brother-in-law, who between them owned about 3700 acres, or $\frac{4}{13}$ of the 12,000 acres included in the Agamenticus patent, were not of course to be abandoned; and I presume Mr. Hooke had little idea that his interest, or the interests of his partners, would be injured or jeopardized by his removal to Salisbury, although it is more than probable that his



Showing Homestead or House lots, the largest being of 4 acres — eleven of the settlers, including Mr. Wm Hooke, received that amount. There were also granted Planting lots, Marsh Lots, Beach Lots, Islands in ye River, &c. 1650. Wm Hooke, Planter, conveyed to Jno. Wheeler of Newbury (probably Mr Hooke's next door neighbor had removed to Newbury by that time) an island of 7 acres on Merrimack river.

SALISBURY 1639

father had a different opinion in the matter. The distance by water between the two points was not very great—about twenty-five miles, I think.

William Hooke probably never designed leaving Agamenticus until the expiration of his term of Governorship (Godfrey's supposition to the contrary notwithstanding) for he says in his letter to Winthrop, already quoted, "I will remove, and about June next, to build there." It is probable however that he had commenced to build somewhat earlier in the year, and that soon after the first of the July following he had completed his removal. On the 15th of that month he wrote the following letter to Gov. Winthrop.

WILLIAM HOOKE OF SALISBURY (LATE OF AGAMENTICUS), TO GOVERNOR
WINTHROP

"Julie 15 daye 1640.

To the Worshipful John Winthrop Es: in Bostone

Worshipfull Sir—Mr Dexter haeth bine at me for a longer tim(e) for the payment of the 436^{li} (288), which is dewe vnto my father from him. I am willing to doe him all the good I canne in the thing, to writ vnto my father to forbare him some serten time longer. I cannot conseue howe he can paye it, moneys being so scarse in the countrey, without time. It makes me the redier to helpe him, finding him soe willing in doing what he canne to make payment, making no question but my father will harken vnto what I shall desire him in the forbarance of this mony. Sir, if I may craue soe much at your hands, by letter to give my father notice of the scar(citi)e of moneys in the countrey, it will be a great meanes to preuayle with him the more to harken vnto my letter; & likewise that I have done my indeuer for the getting in of his moneys, ore else my father may thinke I might have done more than I have done.

Worthy Sir, one courtise more I would desire your worshipp to doe for me; if you think it conuenient. Mr. Godfree haeth informed my father of many false thinges by letter against me, in my remoueing from Accomenticus. Nowe Sir, satisfied him in your wisdome what you think meat. Good Sir, if you shall think it fitt, send a letter by Mr. Dexter, that I may send it to my father with my letters.

I found by my father's letters, which I reseued this summer, my father was informed by some that pretended a greatell of loue vnto mee, that the Church Couenant did deny boeth king & prince, and like wise bindeth a man from remoeuing vppo(n) any ocation to Ould England. These are the thinges that makes by father soe vnwilling of my remoueing. And soe rest in hast leaueing your Worshipp vnto the Allmity Lords protecktion.

Your seruant euer to command
Willi. Hooke."

Alderman Hooke was probably uninformed in regard to his son's removal until too late to oppose it: whereupon, we may presume, he must have been very decided in the expression of his disapprobation, particularly with Mr. Godfrey's representations before him. Not having been admitted into Gov. Hooke's confidence regarding his removal, it is probable that Mr. Godfrey drew largely upon his invention in writing to England, or at least wrote without a full knowledge of all the circumstances, being anxious, no doubt, to state the case as strongly as possible, in hope of invoking sufficient parental influence to prevent a consummation so opposed, as he evidently thought, to the interests of the Agamenticus settlement. When young Hooke, then twenty-eight years of age, wrote this last letter to Gov. Winthrop, we may therefore conclude that he was sensible of the weight of his father's displeasure, and felt the need of some friend like Winthrop, whose testimony would command respect and might be added to his own in disproving representations which had influenced his father unfavorably. Under the circumstances, Alderman Hooke must have thought the representations of Mr. Godfrey were none too strong, and he no doubt expressed himself with considerable emphasis regarding his son's neglect of their mutual interests in his removal from Agamenticus, where considerable money had been expended, and a further outlay was contemplated, and where the personal oversight and assistance of the young man was doubtless considered important. This may account for the sensitiveness shown by the son lest his inability to collect Dexter's account, and his failure to collect other monies then overdue, should be interpreted by his father (considering the latter's probable point of view) as an indication of his disposition to further neglect the interests intrusted to him, conscious as he nevertheless seems to have been (and no doubt with reason) of having made his best "indeavor" in his father's behalf.

The debt of Thomas Dexter appears to have been secured to Mr. Hooke, on the month following the date of this letter, by a mortgage of land and personal property in Lynn, and finally settled by arbitration involving a foreclosure.

The following are abstracts of two records, to be found in Suffolk Deeds (Boston), which bear upon this point, and show the payment, or part payment, made by Dexter.

Suffolk Deeds, lib. 1, fol. 15:

"Tho: Dexter of Linne granted (23:9:1640) vnto Humfrey Hooke (Alderman of Bristol) and others, in securitye for the payment of five hundred pownds vnto the sayed Humphrey and his pt^{rs} all that his ffarme beinge in Linn containinge Eight hundered acrs & this was by indenture dated ye: 20: of August: 1640: he further granted for this same indenture twentye head of Catle, and all such Cropps of Corne that belongeth to the said farme wth all the appurtinances."

Ibid. lib. 1, fol. 117: "William Hooke of Salisbury," by deed dated March 15, 1649, and recorded 24 (2) 1650, "granted vnto Samuel Benet of Lin all that vpland w^{ch} was given to him by an arbitration betwixt Tho: Dexter & him or his ffather Humfrey Hook by Samuel Dudley m^r Mayhew m^r Jennings & Lieftent^t Warker Arbitrator. And this was by an absolute deed of sale, wth this priso that for as much as he sould the sd land too cheepe the said Samuel Bennet should at his owne pp costs & charges recover what should be yet wanting (if any) of the due quantity from Thomas Dexter," etc.

Regarding the disposition of Mr. Hooke's interests at Agamenticus, it should be stated that up to the time of his removal to Salisbury no actual, or complete and equitable division of the land covered by the Agamenticus patent appears to have been made. But the following year the patentees concluded to have a division made, in accordance with their respective interests in the grant, and to have the land set off by metes and bounds.

In Massachusetts archives (289) there is a paper (copy of an original) sworn to before Francis Hooke (290), Justice of the Peace, headed "In Performance of a Court order at the Petition of Roger Gard & others as by the same appeareth: 1641:

The devission of 12000^m Acres of Land amongst the Patentees of Agamenticus october 30, 1641: . . . 6 miles & $\frac{1}{4}$ miles broad makes 12000 which being divided into 13 parts each part will contayne 154 m: (291), which makes $\frac{1}{2}$ a miles wanting 6 poole . . ."

(signed) Thomas Gorges Edward Godfrey Roger Gard

An entry is supposed to have been made in York Deeds of the manner in which these 12000 acres were divided among the patentees. No such entry is now to be found there, but in the judgment of the late Mr. Wm. M. Sargent (an expert in such matters) it was doubtless entered somewhere within the twenty leaves which are missing from the first book of records in the York County Registry of Deeds. Until within a few years the important information connected with this matter was supposed

to be lost beyond recovery, but recently a *copy* of the missing entry was found among the musty files of the Court records, a transcript from which was furnished by Mr. Sargent, and published by the Maine Historical Society in their collections for 1891. I select therefrom the following as showing the boundary of those portions set off to Mr. Hooke as his partners.

A division of 12,000 acres at Agamenticus, made Nov. 11, 1641, by Thomas Gorges, Edward Godfrey and Roger Gard.

“To Humfrey Hooke and Gyles Ellbridg Esq^{rs} & William Hooke & Tho. Hooke Gent^{lem}: All the Land from the stumpe of a tree neere Hene: Donells house, vp to a certen tree marked for a bound, on the vpper side of Mr. Edw Godfreys fild, & from these bounds North East, the yland at the Harbours Mouth, & west ground between the sea side, the lower bound North Eastwards, to remajn In co^man amongst all the patentees. . . . To Mr Humfrey Hooke & partners, all the Land from the afores^d Hillocke to the Point or Cove of Marsh North East. . . . To Mr. Humfrey Hooke & partners from the afores^d bounds North West nine Lynes In length, at 9 Poole & lyne & from thence North East. To Mr Edward Godfrey & partners, that pcell of Land commanly Called the Necke of Land, partly compassed about with the River & to take soe fare vp as shall Contayne the like quantity, that Mr Humfrey Hooke & partners hath on the East side/ The Sault Marsh devided as followeth/ To Mr. Hooke & partners all the Marsh, from the first Entrance to his farm house; All the rest vpwads on that branch of y^e River to Mr. Maverick & partners. And on the western branch of y^e River to Mr Gorges the Pattentee.

Concordat cum origine/ examined & Re:Corded/ July:2:1646

by mee Edw: Godfrey/.

A trve Coppy of this devission aboue written taken out of the originall & therewith Compared this 10th:d:June 1667

Edw: Rushworth Re: Cor:

154 poole In breadth, soe every Pattentee w^{ch} being measured by a lyne of 9 poole In length ammounts to 17 lynes & one poole.”

The proprietors mentioned in the division of the above date, are given in the following list. To some of the names I have attached certain information touching their identity, which, although to some extent a repetition of what has before been stated, may nevertheless be valuable here for ready reference. I have made no investigation regarding the antecedents or connections of those towards the end of the list.

FERDINANDO GORGES Son and heir of John Gorges of London, Gent., and grandson of Sir Ferdinando Gorges of Bristol (the brother-in-law of Lord Gorges), and on the maternal side grandson of the Earl of Lincoln.

- HUMPHREY HOOKE** Merchant of Bristol, England. "Mr. Alderman Hooke" (parish of St. Stephens); Mayor of Bristol, 1629 and 1643; M. P. for Bristol in the "Long Parliament"—a royalist; also in the "Short" (preceding) Parliament, in which his colleague Sergeant John Glanville was Speaker of the House. Mr. Hooke promoted the remarkable voyage of Capt. Thomas James, after whom James' Bay is named, and was a member, with Lord Bacon and others, of the New Foundland Company under charter of James I.
- THOMAS HOOKE** Eldest son of Alderman Hooke, and father of Sir Humphrey Hooke, knt., High Sheriff of Gloucestershire, and of Sir Thomas Hooke of Flanchford, baronet. Sir Humphrey's father-in-law was stepson of Sir Ferdinando Gorges, and nephew of Lord Gorges. Sir Humphrey Hooke and his two partners were the assignees of the Lord Berkeley patent, and promoted settlements on the banks of the Potomac and Rappahannock rivers.
- WILLIAM HOOKE** Second son of Alderman Hooke. Governor of New Somersetshire (Maine), 1638-9, and 1639-40. Removed to Salisbury, Mass., in 1640. Progenitor of the family in this country. He was brother-in-law of Sir Robert Cann of Compton Green, baronet, and of Sir Henry Creswick of Hanham Court, knt.,—called "friend of Charles II." Anne Scrope, daughter of his niece, Mary Hooke, was mother of Thomas, 8th Earl of Westmorland, ancestor of the present earl. Another niece, Annie Cann (Lady Gunning), was wife of Sir Dudley North, Sheriff of London, Commissioner of the Treasury under Charles II, and financial leader of the House of Commons under James II.
- GILES ELBRIDGE** Merchant of Bristol. Was "nephew" and heir of his partner Robert Aldworth, by marriage with Robert's niece Elizabeth, daughter of John Aldworth; also son-in-law of Alderman Hooke, by marriage with the latter's daughter Mary (second wife), by whom he had five children, four of whom (son Giles, and daughters Mary, Cicely, and Sarah) were living fifteen years after his death.
- ROBERT THOMSON (292)** Uncle of Baron Haversham, and brother of Sir William Thomson of Lyme street London, was Governor of the East India Co., and father of Sir Thomas Hooke's wife Elizabeth.
- SAMUEL MAVERICK** Of Noddle's Island (East Boston); Agent of the Thomsons of London.
- ELIAS MAVERICK** (Brother of Samuel).
- WILLIAM JEFFREYS**
- HUGH BURLY**
- EDWARD GODFREY**
- WILLIAM PISTOR**
- LAWRENCE BRINELY** (Probably Lawrence Brinley, of London, merchant, brother of Richard Brinley, one of the King's auditors. They were sons of Richard Brinley of Exeter, Devon, formerly of Willenhall, Staffordshire.—Visitation of London 1634. Harl. Soc.)

Mr. Humphrey Hooke's partners were his sons Thomas and William Hooke, and his son-in-law Giles Elbridge. Mr. Edward Godfrey's partners were Robert Thomson, Lawrence Brinley, and William Pistor. Mr. Samuel Maverick's partners were Elias Maverick, William Jeffreys, and Hugh Bursly.

Mr. Hooke was admitted a freeman in the Massachusetts colony Oct. 12, 1640.

"12 (8th mo. 1640) Mr. Willi: Hooke admitted a freeman."

He was chosen a deputy to the General Court to represent the Town of Salisbury in 1643 and 1647. At the time of his first election he was thirty-one years of age. The original manuscript of a "bill" presented by Mr. Hooke in the House of Deputies during his second term (1647) is still extant. See fac-simile on opposite page.

This document is in the handwriting of Mr. Bozoune Allen, Clerk of the House, although the signature is Mr. Hooke's. It is a fair sample of the writing of that time and belongs to what has been called "the middle period of phonetic spelling and distracting calligraphy." As the peculiar formation given by the calligraphers of that day to certain letters of the alphabet may prove a stumbling block to most readers, it may be well to transcribe it as follows:

"The ffreemen (of) Salisbury meeting together made choyce of Mr Dudley, Mr Batt and Robert Pike for the endinge of smale causes there, and doe desire this hon^{bl} Cort to confirme the same as also q^r request that Mr Dudley beinge chosen an asosiate for the Cort at Ipswich may have yo^r approbation.

Willi Hooke"

"the Deb^{ts} have passed this
bill & doe desire o^r hon^{bl}
majestrates to consent therto
by the house Bozoune Allen."

Turning to the records of the General Court for 1647 we find the following entries:

"Mr. Samu: Dudley, Mr. Batt, & Rob^t Pike are appointed for y^e and end^s of small causes at Salsberry."

"Mr. Samu: Dudley is appointed an associate in y^e Corte at Ipswich."

Descendants of Wm. Hooke will feel an interest, if not a certain pride in the fact that he was a member of that General Court

The three men Salisbury meeting to gether
made a boyn of m^e dudly m^e Ball and Robert
like for the ending of smake cuncts your.
and it is desired the Court to confirm
the Law as also ~~to request~~ that m^e dudly boyn
chafren an ap^osiab for the Court at ~~the~~ may
have you a relation

The Bills have passed the
Bill also desired of the
Marshall to Comfort works
by the house Bozouner ~~the~~
Wills Hooke.

BILL PRESENTED IN HOUSE OF DEPUTIES BY WILLIAM HOOKE

which in May 1647, established the system of common schools which has proved so essential to the development and preservation of free institutions in this country. "To the end that learning may not be buried in the graves of our forefathers in Church and Commonwealth, the Lord assisting our endeavors, it is therefore ordered by this Court and authority thereof, that every township in this jurisdiction, after the Lord hath increased them to fifty householders, shall then forthwith appoint one within their towns to teach all such children as shall resort to him to write and read."

The hardships and trials incident to Mr. Hooke's life as a pioneer, after the ease, not to say the luxury of his surroundings in England, may have had some influence in impairing his health and shortening his life. Upon the records of the General Court in 1643 is the following entry:

"Mr. Hooke had leave to depart not being well."

It is possible that had he been in better health he would have taken a more active part in public affairs. If in such matters his health failed to influence his inclination, we must conclude that he differed essentially from his father in this taste for public life. His official honors in the Eastern province certainly appear to have been resigned without reluctance. After remaining in this country for seventeen years, he returned to Bristol in 1650, and died in that city in 1652, aged 40. The record of his burial is in the parish registry of St. Stephen's in Bristol. "Mr. William Hoocke, Julie 8, 1652."

We have seen that the noblemen and gentry of England at first paid considerable attention to the more northern part of our country. The Earl of Sterling (Sir William Alexander), who with the exception of Gorges seems to have shown more interest in colonization at the north than any of the others, had Nova Scotia parcelled out to him, and when he lost that province, which had been ceded to France by the treaty of St. Germain in 1632, he was given the territory between the St. Croix and the Kennebec, and was also to have Long Island near Hudson's river. His northern domain was to be called the county of Canada.

Among the residents in that portion of New England assigned to Gorges, we find, in the early days, a nephew of the Earl of Warwick, a son (293) of Sir Thomas Josselyn, William and Thomas Gorges, and Francis Champernoon (294). Mr. Tuttle

claims that Champernoon was of royal lineage, which was certainly true of the Gorges representatives, including Sir Ferdinando, who were descendants of Edward I, King of England, and of Walter Gifford, Earl of Buckingham. Fuller investigation will probably show that there were others among the early Maine settlers who were offshoots of titled families. Most of this class, and many of their associates and retainers were in sympathy with the cause of Charles I, in other words, were "Royalists."

But this Royalist element failed to impress itself very strongly upon New England. With the civil wars followed by the Puritan rule in Old England (from 1642 to 1660), the "Cavaliers," as they were called, had all they could attend to at home. Their representatives and adherents in Maine were too feeble in numbers to resist their Puritan rivals, who, as before stated, finding their friends the "Roundheads" in control of England under Cromwell, soon assumed jurisdiction over the eastern province. After the Restoration, Charles II endeavored to right matters by sending over a royal commission, selected by his brother, the Duke of York (afterwards James II), and consisting of our old acquaintances Samuel Maverick, Esq., Col. Richard Nichols, Sir Robert Carr, and Col. George Cartwright. After an expedition to Manhattan (now New York) which they succeeded in capturing from the Dutch, they proceeded to Massachusetts and to Maine. But Puritanism had then become so powerful in New England that it practically controlled those elements of opposition in the Maine province which it had not already neutralized or crowded out. Most of the eastern settlements had dwindled in numbers, many of the chief supporters of the original patentees having departed, while the internal prosperity and trade of the province had become so restricted or had remained so stationary, that the heirs of most the original proprietors in England concluded that the outlook for their enterprise in that part of the world was not very promising, and so turned their attention elsewhere. Those whose occupations or antecedents allied them to the commercial interests of Great Britain, like Sir Humphrey Hooke, the elder son of Thomas Hooke the patentee, became interested in the Island of Barbadoes, and in the more southern provinces of this country, Maryland and Virginia. Others, like Sir Thomas Hooke (brother of Sir Humphrey) and the Thompsons, turned to interests in the East Indies.

Upon the restoration of Charles II, Sir Humphrey Hooke (nephew of Gov. Hooke) was appointed a member of the Council and Assembly of Barbadoes. The restoration of the Royal authority in the island was the first duty which devolved upon this Council. Minutes of a meeting of the Council held July 24, 1661 give the names of the Burgesses elected to the General Assembly. Lt. Col. Humphrey Hooke (vice Thomas Peade) was elected for St. Thomas. It was agreed at this meeting to repeal all laws from the "Rendition of the island until its restoration to the King's government."

The following year Lord Berkeley and his associates, to whom a Patent for Virginia had been granted by Charles II, conveyed their interest therein to Sir Humphrey Hooke and his partners. In order that their authority should not be questioned by the Governor and Council of Virginia they obtained a letter from the King defining their rights, and requesting the coöperation of the Virginia authorities. Copies of this and a second letter from the King upon the same subject are entered in Her Majesty's Public Record Office. I give the following abstract:

Dec. 5, 1662. The King to the Governor and Council of Virginia. Whereas his Majesty in the first year of his reign (18th Sept. 1649) granted to Henry Lord Jermyn, now Earl of St. Albans'; Ralph Lord Hopton, then Baron of Stratton; Sir John Berkeley, now Baron of Stratton; Sir William Morton, knt., and others, all that territory in America, bounded by the rivers Tappahannacke or Rapphannacke and Quiriough or Patowmecke and Thasopayocke Bay, together with the rivers themselves and all the islands within them, which by reason of the late unhappy times they could not enjoy. And whereas the said Earl of St. Albans, Lord Berkeley, Sir William Morton, and John Trethewy assignee of said Lord Hopton, and the surviving patentees, have lately granted to Sir Humphrey Hooke, knt., John Fitzherbert, Esq. (295), and Robert Vicaredge, merchant, said territory for a certain number of years, His Majesty's pleasure is, without any intention of withdrawing the said Plantation from under the care of the Governor and Council of Virginia, that they aid and assist such person as shall be employed by the parties interested for settling the Plantation and receiving the rents and profits thereof, said patentees having merited much by their great services and sufferings, as well for his Majesty as for his late Royal father. 2 pp. (Don. Entry Book, Charles II, No. 10, pp. 19-21).

Notwithstanding the aforesaid instructions, it appears that the Governor and Council of Virginia not only declined to admit the authority of the Patentees, but seized and retained the Patent which had been submitted to their inspection by the agent of Mr. Hooke

and his partners, whereupon the latter appealed to the King, who on the 3d of August 1663 issued another letter of which the following is an abstract:

The King to the Governor and Council of Virginia.

Recites the patent granted in the first year of his Majesty's reign to Henry Lord Jermyn, now Earl of St. Alban's, Ralph Lord Hopton, Sir John Berkeley, Baron of Stratton, Sir Wm. Morton, Sergeant-at-law, and others, of a tract of land within the heads of Rapahannock and Potowomac rivers, and all islands within the banks of said rivers, which by reason of the later unhappy and unsettled times they could not plant or enjoy; the demise of said Patent to Sir Humphrey Hooke, John Fitzherbert, and Robt. Vicaredge; and his Majesty's letter of 5th Dec. last to the Governor and Council of Virginia to be aiding and assisting in settling said Plantation, and receiving the rents, issues and profits thereof. Is induced to believe that said letters have miscarried, as they have lately obstructed the proceedings upon said Letters Patent, so *they are commanded on sight hereof* not only to forbear any further interruption, but to restore said Letters Patent to those employed by Sir Humphrey Hooke and the others, which the King is informed they detain, and to assist and protect them in carrying on that work.

Signed by the King and countersigned by Sec. Sir Henry Bennet, 3 pp. (Colonial Papers, Vol. XVII, No. 66).

On the same date there is entered a draft of the proceeding with corrections by Williamson, the Secretary of State. 3 pp. (Ibid., No. 67).

The above is also entered in the Colonial Entry Book, Vol. XCIII, p. 32-35, with a marginal note "Enforcement of a formal letter to the Governor of Virginia." 4 pp.

When Mr. William Hooke returned to England in 1650, he took with him his sons William and Josiah, then about fourteen and twelve years of age, respectively. They probably accompanied him for the purpose of completing their education in Bristol, and of visiting their grandparents whom they had never seen. Mrs. Hooke remained in America with his youngest son, Jacob, then ten years of age. As he left his wife and one of his children here, there can be no doubt I think that Mr. Hooke intended to return; but as there seems to be evidence that his health was not of the best, he probably thought it possible that he might not *be able* to do so. Although there is evidence that Mrs. Hooke was amply able to look after her own, and her son's interests here, it is not to be presumed that she was left to manage the farm, or be burdened with the other interests of her husband at Salisbury during his absence. It appears that these interests were left in charge of Mr. Hooke's next

door neighbor, Samuel Hall, who, according to a deposition of the latter made in 1664, rented the Hooke farm to John Davis of Newbury, planter. Mrs. Hooke appears to have lived in Boston for a time, perhaps at the house of her nephew Richard Knight, at or near whose home she was possibly residing when her son William returned, probably in 1668. Thomas Bradbury testifies to the fact that he (Bradbury) was with her *in Boston* at or about the time the son first met his mother upon his return to this country. Although Mrs. Hooke probably remained in Boston much of the time during her son's residence in Bristol, I judge from certain depositions on file with Essex Deeds, and from the probabilities in the case, that she took the charge of affairs at Salisbury out of the hands of Mr. Hall, after she received word of the death of her husband.

When Mr. Hooke went to England, it is possible, as I have said, that he had some thought of being unable to return. There seems to be ample evidence that he never did return, even for a time. Some slight evidence to this effect is furnished by the fact that there appears to be no conveyance or other document here, bearing Mr. Hooke's signature of a later date than 1650. But there is more positive evidence. The latest conveyance I have noticed, either at York, or at Salisbury, is dated July 24, 1650, and its wording seems to me to be absolutely conclusive upon this point. It reads as follows:

York Deeds, I, part 1, 121. "Willi: Hooke of Sawlesbury M^rchant," gives to Mary Jewell, wife of Sa^mell Jewell, of Georgeana, half the neck at "Cape Nudduck," also twenty acres of upland, and the Marsh joining the beach, "*upon this Condition, that if I the s^d Willi^a: Hooke do not return for New England, then I do freely give and absolute grant the said Land & Meddow, vnto the said Mary & her heyres for euer.*" Recorded June 30, 1662.

It was nearly twelve years after this deed was given before it was recorded, and doubtless it would never have reached the records if Mrs. Jewell had not acquired a title, by reason of Mr. Hooke's failure to "return for New England," thus fulfilling the condition upon which her title depended.

At the time of Mr. William Hooke's death in 1652, his two sons then in Bristol, being minors, were naturally placed under the guardianship of their grandfather the Alderman. They were the two "unruly boys" mentioned by the latter in his will in 1658, while

“their brother Jacob Hooke,” whom he had never seen, and who was in New England with his mother, was the one he hoped “would prove better.” I have given an abstract of the will of Alderman Hooke, and have commented upon the above expressions therein, and their probable provocation, in that portion of this undertaking devoted to the English branch of the family. A few years after receipt of information from England of the death of her husband, Mrs. Hooke petitioned the General Court for authority to administer upon the estates of her “first” and her “late” husband.

In the records of the General Court, in the handwriting of Left. William Torrey “y^e Clerk of y^e House of Dep^{tys}” for 1655, is the following entry:

May 23, 1655. “Mrs Elinor Hooke p^rferinge a petition to take into her possessi^o, & to make sale of certayne lands belonging to her first husband, at the eastward, hath her petition granted, viz^t, all such lands as doth clearly appeare sometime to be the estate of Cap^t Norton, her s^d husband, p^rvided there be no legall convayance of the land heretofore made.”

“The affores^d Mrs Hooke, p^rfering another petition for the disposing of the estate & lands of her late husband, M^r William Hooke, received this answer: that the Court thinkes meet to give her power to make improvement of the estate & lands, & p^rduce thereof, left her by her s^d husband, & to demaund, receive, & receover all debts, rents, revenues, & p^rfitts thereof, for the discharge of just debts & accom^odat of her selfe & yongest son, mentioned in the pe^t, but not to make sale of any land till the Court take further order therein.”

The interest of the absent sons had to be considered. It was probably not made apparent to the Court that any need then existed for the sale of lands for the payments of debts, or otherwise; or that there was need of any future order to that end, at least while the two boys and their guardian in England were alive. Should such necessity subsequently become apparent, the Court, as seems to be intimated, would “take further order therein.”

The record, under date of May 29, 1655, in the handwriting of Secretary Ed. Rawson, reads as follows:

“In ans^r to the peti^on of Mrs Ellino^r Hooke, late wife of M^r W^m Hooke, deceased, the Court, judgeth it meete to impower hir, the peti^oner, to make improuement of the estate, & land, and produce thereof, of hir late husbands, M^r W^m Hooke, and to demand, receiue, and recouer all debts, rents, reuennues, and proffitts thereof, for the discharge of just debts, and accom^od^on of hirsself and youngest sonne men^oned in the peti^on, but not to make sale of any lands till this Court take further order therein.”

"In ans^r to the peti^on of Mrs Ellinor Hooke, crauing that shee might be impowered to make sale of such lands at Accomenticus, now York, that hath binn formerly appropriated to Cap^t Norton, heretofore hir husband, & lajd out to him, and recorded in the booke of records there, the Court doth graunt the peti^oner power to make sale of all such lands to and for hir oune vse as shall clearly appeare sometime to be the estate of Cap^t Norton, as is desired in hir peti^on, provided there be no legall conuajance of the land heretofore made."

Mr. William Hooke, during his life, had made disposition of a considerable portion of his land at Agamenticus. Among other conveyances, in what remains of the first book of records in the York County Registry of Deeds, were the following:

York Deeds, I., part 1, 100. July 20, 1640. Wm. Hooke gives thirty acres to Mr. Hene: Norton of (the city of) Georgeana (formerly Agamenticus, now York). Recorded Dec. 20, 1660.

Ibid. I., part 1, 98. June 16, 1643. "Willi^a Hooke of Salesbury, M^rchant," sells to "John Alcocke of Georgeana, In the province of Mayne, Plant^r" dwelling house and one hundred acres of land. Recorded Aug. 16, 1660.

Ibid., I, part 1, 101. Oct. 18, 1644. "Mr. William Hooke M^rchant, dwelling in Sawlesbury in New England," sells to John Gouch and Peter Wyre of Georgeana forty acres. Recorded Jan'y 25, 1660-1.

Same book, page, and date. William Hooke sells to John Gouch Jr., ten acres adjoining the above.

Same book and page, July 19, 1645. "William Hooke Gentl^e: one of the Pattentees upon the River of Agamenticus" by Henry Sympson (his stepson-in-law), his Attorney, "layd out" twenty acres to Abraham Preble, twenty acres to Joⁿ Twisden, and twenty acres to Rich^d Bankes. "The Land about mentioned I, William Hooke do grant vnto Abraham Preble, John Twisden, Rich^d Bankes, if it bee laid out of y^e Land which is William Hookes or Tho: Hookes or Gyles Ellbridgs." Recorded Jan'y 28, 1660-1.

Ibid., I, part 1, 8. July 16, 1650. Wm. Hooke sells to John Alcocke ten acres of land on the east side of the river near "Cape Nedicke" beach, and to John Heard of Georgeana, Carpenter, ten acres adjoining the same, on the northeast side "of the little river by cape Nedicke beach." Recorded Aug. 20, 1650.

Ibid., I, part 1, 9. July 16, 1650. Wm. Hooke "of Salsbury M^rchant" sells to John Alcocke and John Heard one half the neck of land at Cape Neddicke, "as full right and Interest as I the said William Hooke have granted vnto me by my letter Patten w^{ch} necke of land is bounded from one sandy beach to the other sandy beach." Recorded Aug. 28, 1650.

As most of these conveyances, with others previously quoted, were recorded from ten to fifteen years after they were given, it is probable there were others that failed to reach the records. Without doubt there were also conveyances made by him which

were recorded in the twenty leaves now missing from the said first book of records.

Before making conveyance of any land at Agamenticus, left by her second husband, Mrs. Hooke waited until her son William, then living in Bristol, had reached his majority, when she obtained a power of attorney from him, as appears by the following:

York Deeds, 1, part 1, 100. Oct. 29, 1660. "Ellner Hooke the relict Widdow of Capt: Walter Norton, & the Relict Widdow of Mr William Hooke deceased, in the County of Norfocke (296) . . . and the s^d Ellner Hooke being Impoured by the Generall Court held at Boston, the 9th: of June: 1655: to make sayle of such Lands at Accamenticus, now yorke, that have beene formerly appropriated to Capt: Norton heretofore her husband, & also Impoured by her sunn Mr Willi^a: Hooke, by his Letter of Atturney, hath granted, bargained sould" etc. Acknowledged Oct. 29, 1660 before Joⁿ Endicott Gove^r.

I find no reference to Mrs. Hooke, or her son Jacob, which indicates that either of them was living in New England subsequent to Oct. 11, 1665, except the statement of Thomas Bradbury that Mrs. Hooke was shortly afterwards (presumably in 1668) living in Boston. In the records of the General Court is the following entry:

Oct. 11th 1665. "In ans^r to the petition of Mrs Ellinor Hooke, the Court granted hir a hearing of her case between hir & Cap^t. Thomas Clarke; & both partyes appearing, the Court having heard what both partyes could say, judge it most expedient to referr the peti^coner to the ordinary course of justice, as the lawe provides." Petition referred to inferior court.

As Josiah and Jacob² Hooke were not mentioned by their grandmother in her will, made in 1660, and as I find no subsequent mention of either of them elsewhere, I conclude that they may possibly have died before that date. However, as the family in this country are all descended from the eldest son, William, I have not been very diligent in seeking for further information regarding his brothers.

The records of the parish of St. Stephen's, in Bristol, England, show that William² Hooke married Elizabeth Dyer (297).

Marriages in Parish Registry of St. Stephen's, Bristol. 1660, Dec. 17. "William Hoocke and Elizabeth Dier."

This alliance with the Dyer family accounts for the name "Dyer Hooke" in subsequent generations of the family here.

William³ Hooke, the eldest son of William² Hooke and Elizabeth Dyer, was undoubtedly born in Bristol, but I have failed to find his baptismal record there. I succeeded however in finding, as I anticipated, in St. Stephen's (Bristol) registry, a record of their oldest daughter, Florence Hooke, who subsequently married James Coffin of Newbury, Mass.

Christenings in Parish Register of St. Stephen's, Bristol. 1663, Dec. 16. "Florence daughter of William Hooke & Elizabeth" (298).

The other children, Elizabeth, Eleanor, Humphrey, Jacob, Martha, and Josiah, were all born in Salisbury, Mass. The boy, William² Hooke, after the death of his father in 1652, must have resided at the manor of Kingsweston for several years while under the guardianship of his grandfather. It is not improbable that Kingsweston was his home during his betrothal, and up to the time of his marriage with Miss Dyer in 1660. In naming his oldest daughter Florence, instead of Elizabeth (his wife's name), William² Hooke seems to have departed from the usual custom at that time in such matters. That name was borne by the wife of his first cousin Sir Humphrey Hooke, who was lord of Kingsweston after 1660. Although there can be no doubt that Lady Hooke was the one for whom William² Hooke's daughter was named, the selection of the name may not have been due to the father, but rather to Lady Florence Hooke herself who was probably the god-mother. In that capacity she may have *elected* to give the child *her own name*, thereby exercising a right which at that time was quite within the discretion of the sponsor when it suited her fancy to do so. Queen Anne, at a subsequent time, exercised a similar privilege when standing god-mother to the infant son of Lady Hooke's cousin, Earl Poulet (Prime Minister of England), giving the boy the extraordinary name of "Lord Anne" Poulet.

The christening of William² Hooke's eldest daughter at Bristol, if performed under the auspices suggested above, must have made one of the red-letter days in his family annals. Macaulay says the pomp of such ceremonies, among the wealthy families of that city, was renowned throughout England at that period. The supposed Puritan leanings of William Hooke were evidently no bar to the ceremonial, which was performed under the Episcopal forms, and duly recorded at St. Stephen's.

William² Hooke, who had been in Bristol since the year 1650, made his re-appearance in Salisbury, as indicated by the records of Essex County, May 3, 1669, when, calling himself merchant, he sold salt marsh granted by the town to his "father Mr. William Hooke" whom he called "merchant," and who was elsewhere called planter, "some time of y^e same town butt now deceased, . . . s^d Lott being delivered in y^e possession of y^e said Eastman *by my mother* M^s Elener Hooke." He gave bonds to protect purchaser from any claim under the right of dower belonging to his wife "Elizabeth," as appears by the deed.

This would indicate that his wife had not accompanied him from England. However she was here with her children William³, and Florence, in 1671, for we find in the Salisbury records the birth of her daughter Elizabeth "22th: of y^e 12th: m^o 1671." (Feb. 22, 1671-72) (299).

"March y^e 30, 1677, Mr. William Hooke took oath of allegiance and fidelity before me Tho: Bradbury Cpt. of y^e Millitary Company of Salisbury."

The Salisbury records show the death of Josiah, the youngest son, shortly after his birth in 1683. William³ Hooke, the eldest son of William² Hooke, seems to have resided in York, or Kittery (300), for several years prior to 1690. After that date he appears in Salisbury, and the records of that town show that six of his children were born there between 1693 and 1708. He probably married his first wife Mary—(301), widow of Robert³ Pike of Salisbury, in 1691. Robert³ Pike, who was son of Major Robert² Pike of Salisbury, was born June 26, 1655, and died Aug. 22, 1690. His brother Rev. John Pike of Dover, N. H., has the following entry in his journal.

"1690, Aug. 22, My dear Bro: Robert deceased by the malignant feaver, after he had been ten weeks weakened with the feaver & ague."

Robert³ Pike, by wife Mary, had son Robert⁴ Pike born Sept. 3, 1687, and daughter Sarah, born Feb. 3, 1689. They were baptised at the first church in Salisbury May 27, 1688, and Feb. 16, 1689, respectively. Major Robert² Pike was appointed administrator of the estate of his son Robert³ April 22, 1691. In the petition 31: 1st:1691, Major Pike says, my son Robert died Sept. last leaving a wife and two children "who have always dwelt upon and made use of my estate." In a subsequent petition, Sept. 25, 1694, Major

Pike says son Robert died in 1690 leaving a boy and girl, "since which, the widow is married to Mr. William Hook Jr. of Salisbury." Major Pike subsequently gave his homestead estate in Salisbury to said boy (his grandson Robert).

That William³ Hooke resided in the eastern province (Maine), for several years prior to 1690, is indicated by the fact that his name (generally as a witness) appears upon numerous legal documents most of which seem to have been drawn in York or Kittery by Major Francis Hooke. The Major must have been some connection of the family, not however a brother of William¹ Hooke, as stated by Savage (302); and I have thought it probable, as the Major was "an eminent councillor", that young William³ Hooke was apprenticed to him during his minority, for the purpose of instruction in legal matters. This theory is supported by the fact that William³ Hooke, after reaching his majority, was admitted to the bar as an attorney, in York county, Maine, Sept. 14, 1687 (303). Alderman Hooke had a brother Edward in Bristol, who was a barrister, I think. Perhaps he was father of Major Hooke. There is recorded in Essex Deeds (Salem) an instrument drawn in Bristol in the office of Edward Hooke, and witnessed by his servant (clerk) Hancocke.

As William² Hooke had never properly administered upon the estate of his father, he seems to have found it necessary to take that step, after a lapse of forty years from the time of his father's death, in order to give a proper title to certain premises he wished to convey. We therefore find the following entry in Essex County Probate Records (Salem), Old Series, Book 3, Page 198: "28 day of Sept. 1694. At Newbury/ Admin^{con} of all and Singular, the goods, chattels, rights & Credits of William Hooke formerly of Salisbury deceased. Granted to William Hooke, son of the deceased, having given bonds with Suretyfe for his adminⁿ according to law." In 1717, having reached eighty years of age, he seems to have concluded to divide his real estate among his children. He had previously assigned to his son-in-law James Coffin his one-third interest in the 1500 acres at Cape Neddock (York) formerly held by his father under the nine hundred and ninety-nine years' lease. But he still held as "only surviving son & heir of William Hooke formerly of Salisbury and late of Bristol in Great Britain" (304), the land at York, formerly owned by his father under the Agamenticus patent—or that portion of it which his

father had not conveyed prior to his decease. He also held the estate in Salisbury inherited from his father—or that portion of it which he had not sold prior to 1717. As evidence of his intention to divide his real estate among his sons we find the following conveyances:

Essex Deeds, lib. 28, fol. 274. "William Hooke Sen^r to William Hooke Jun^r, deed on record May 4, 1717. To all people to whome these presents shall come I William Hooke doe send Greeting Know yee that I ye Said William Hooke of ye Towne of Salisbury . . . for & in consideration of love good will and affection which I have & doe bear towards my loving Son William Hooke of ye Same Towne of Salisbury . . . give & grant unto the said William Hooke his heirs" etc. "that Whereas my Honoured father Mr William Hooke was a freeholder in the Towne of yorke . . . in New England I ye Said William Hooke of Salisbury doe give unto my well beloved Son William Hooke . . . afores^d that which was my father's housing & house Lott in ye Township of yorke & all ye Comon rights or freeholds belonging thereunto & five hundred acres of land commonly caled Scotland where ye said William Hooke shall take in ye pattent right of *which with these presents I have delivered* him ye said William Hooke. Signed with my owne hand & bearing even date. To Have & To Hold" etc. Dated "this Twenty third Day of Aprill in ye third yeare of the reign of our Sovereign Lord George by ye grace of God of Great Britain ffrance & Ireland King & ye yeare of our Lord 1717." Signed, sealed, and acknowledged by William Hooke.

In memorandum attached to the above appears: "& another piece or parcel of land of upland running three miles from yorke river North East upon ye Sea of which I give to my Son William Hooke as an addition to ye Deed above written in as full & Ample Manner to all Intents & Constru^ons as if it were never so fully Amply & Legally writ in ye preceeding Instrument . . . & I doe also further Give unto my son William Hooke five hundred Acres of land More lying half a mile from my daughters Elizabeth & Eliner & next Mr. Maverick's land" (305). Signed William Hooke and a seal.

Essex Deeds, lib. 32, fol. 85. William Hooke Sen^r of Salisbury, by deed dated July 2, 1717, conveys to his two sons Humphrey and Jacob "a Certain Messuage or Tenem^t in Salisbury afores^d Containing about 100 or 120 acres of land & marsh & dwelling house in which I still live with ye appurtenances as may more fully appear by a Deed under my hand & Seal dated Jan'y 12th 1696-7 . . . to be equally divided between them after my death," etc. It would appear by the deed last referred to, that William Hooke Sen^r retained a life interest in the premises.

York Deeds, lib. 8, fols. 206-207. "William Hooke Sen^r" of Salisbury "in

Consideration of that Natural Love & Affection which I have and do bear to my Sons Humphrey Hook of Amesbury in ye County afores^d (Essex) & Jacob Hook, of Salisbury," conveys to them by deed of Warranty "Sundry Lotts Tracts & parcels of land & Meadow Lying & being in ye Township of York in ye province of Maine formerly So Called & now in ye County of York in ye province of ye Massachusetts Bay in New England that is to say a Certaine piece or parcell of land & Meadow of about five hundred Acres more or less Containing ye one Moiety or Halfe part of Hookes farm So Called Scittuate on ye Northerly Side of York river At Scotland So Called . . . & Also A Certain parcell of land Scittuate on ye Sea Side being by Estimation four score rods wide & about one Mile & An halfe long beginning at one mile & an halfe distance from ye Mouth of York river & so runing Northeasterly Towards Cape neck unto ye Extent of my father Hookes grant being by Estimation Two Hundred & fifty Acres more or less & Also all that tract & parcell of Land Comonly Called & known by ye name of Cape neddock as it was formerly granted to my s^d father m^r W^m Hooke dec^d by Letters pattents & furthermore One thousand Acres more of land wth in ye s^d Township of York out of ye grants & patents formerly made to my s^d father m^r W^m Hooke dec^d." Dated May 1, 1717. "Annoq RR^s Georgii Magna Brattania &c^t Tertio."

For some reason which I have not determined, or thoroughly investigated, his sons reconveyed to him on the 28th of August following.

York Deeds, lib. 8, fol. 232. "Wm Hook Jun^r of Salisbury" by deed dated Aug. 28, 1717, quit claimed unto his "Honoured father m^r W^m Hook of Salisbury afores^d" all his interest in "Certain Lands & rights" at York, described in deed of gift to him from his father "s^d W^m Hooke Sen^r dated April 23, 1717 & ye postscript Addition So Called unto s^d deed dated may the third 1717," and recorded in Essex Deeds "lib: 28: fol^o 274 or any other former deed or deeds, . . . Annoq Rⁱ R^s Georgii Magna Brittainia &c Quarto."

Signed sealed, and acknowledged by "William Hooke Jun^r,"

York Deeds, lib. 8, fol. 233. Humphry and Jacob Hooke of Salisbury quit claim "unto our Hon^d ffather Mr William Hooke of Salisbury" all right to property in York by virtue of the deed of gift to us from our said father "dated May 1, 1717 recorded in ye Public records for ye County of York lib: 8th fol 207," or of any other deed to us made by our said father. "Witness our hands & seals this 28th day of Augst Anno Domini 1717 Annoq Regni Regis Georgii Magna Brittainia &c^t Quarto

In presence of us

Humphry Hook (seal)

x

Jacob Hook (seal)

Solomo Shepard

Caleb Cushing

Cap^{tn} Humphrey Hooke & m^r Jacob Hook p^rsonally Appeared before me ye Subscriber & both of them did Acknowledge" etc.

"Henry Sum^{er}by Just^{ce} of yr peace."

William³ Hooke lived to be about eighty years of age. I have not determined at what date his wife Mary died, but about five years before his death he took to himself a second wife as appears by the record of marriages in Salisbury, to wit: By Rev. Caleb Cushing, May 17, 1738, "Mr. William Hook and M^{rs} Sarah Carr, wido." Mrs. Carr was probably Sarah (Greeley) third wife and widow (after thirty-one days of married life) of Richard², son of George¹ Carr of Salisbury. Richard Carr was aged sixty-eight when he married Sarah Greeley in 1727. John² Carr, a younger brother of Richard Carr, is the one whom the aged Mrs. Bradbury was convicted of bewitching (Maj. Robert Pike, the great commoner, was the one who so ably and fearlessly defended her), so that he (John Carr) became crazed and prematurely died. The testimony of his brother William Carr, at the trial, shows that the proposed match of John Carr and Jemima True was broken off by his father, and that John became melancholy and at times insane. (Hoyt, vide *Bradb. Memorial*, Pike's "*New Puritan*," etc.) Jemima² True (Henry¹) subsequently married Maj. (afterwards Col.) John² March (Hugh¹), who was two years the junior of John Carr. She was mother of the wife of William³ Hooke's brother Capt. Humphrey³ Hooke. Col. John March was commander of an expedition against Port Royal in 1707.

William³ Hooke died in 1743. His will appears in Essex County Probate Records (Old Series, Book 25, pp. 223-224).

23d day of June A. D. 1743. Will of William Hooke of Salisbury. Sons Jacob, Josiah, William and Francis. My daughters Elizabeth Eaton and Mary Bennet. Wife Sarah. Sons Josiah and William executors. In case my sons sell any land given them, "They shall first be obliged to give the Refusal of the same to each other, and not sell it to any stranger, *That it may be kept in the Family and name of the Hookes forever.*"

In closing my record of the family for the 17th Century, it only remains to speak of Captain Humphrey³ Hooke and Jacob³ Hooke, the younger sons of William² Hooke.

An original manuscript, treating of the French and Indian wars, in which the following account appears, was found about sixty years ago in a box of papers bequeathed to the Mass. Hist. Soc. by Rev. Dr. Freeman.

“Casco, which is the utmost frontier of that part which Major March had command of . . . was saluted by Moxus, Wanungonet, and Assacombuit, three of their most puissant sachems. They gradually advanced with a flag of truce, and sent one before them to acquaint him (Major March) that they had matter of moment to impart to him. He at first slighted the motion, but on further thought he went out to meet them. They seemed to him but few in number and unarmed. However he ordered two sentinels to be ready to assist in case of danger. They no sooner saluted him, but with hatchets under their clothes they assaulted him. But being a man of uncommon strength, activity and courage, he wrested a hatchet from one of them, with which he did good execution. They shot down one of his guards, by some that lay in ambush near them; yet if Sergeant Hook, had not with a file of ten men rescued him, they had in all probability overpowered him.”

Rev. Samuel Niles, the writer of the above, was born May 1, 1674, and graduated at Harvard in 1699; he was therefore a contemporary of Sergeant Hook, and wrote to some extent as a reporter of current events.

This incident assumes a somewhat romantic aspect when we discover that young Humphrey and Jacob Hooke both married representatives of the March family—one a daughter, and the other a niece of Major John March. They were the only male members of the Hooke family then living in New England, except their brother William Hooke; one of them therefore must have been the Sergeant Hooke in question. He was no doubt Sergeant, afterwards Captain Humphrey Hooke. Samuel Sewall has the following entry in his diary: “Dec^r 7, 1706. The Gen^l Court is prorogued to Wednesday the 12th of February *mane*. I invited the Gov^r to dine at Holms’s. There were the Gov^r, Col. (Colonels) Townsend, Bromfield, Leverett, Williams, Capt. (Captains) Wells, Sheldon, Hook, Sewall” (306).

APPENDIX TO PART I

APPENDIX TO PART I

1. According to Agard, the antiquarian, there were scarcely twenty English land-holders to be found in the country, who had not been forcibly thrust out of their possessions by the Normans, or been obliged to rescue them from their grasp, by the payment of a proportionate sum.

2. Chailey is about six miles from Lewes. In going to the "Hooke" from Lewes we take the direct road to Cuckfield, and, after traveling five miles, reach the South Common (Chailey); one-half a mile further we reach Charles street; then taking the road to the left and continuing three-quarters of a mile we reach the "Hooke."

3. The "hundred" in English law, is that part of a shire or county consisting of ten tithings, or ten times ten households.

4. Horsfield.

5-6. Dallyway and Cartwright, pp. 260, 300.

7. See Adelung's German Dictionary, in verb Knappe, from whence Knave, Knight, and Swedish Knape, are said to be derived.

8. Cartwright, p. 293.

9. Sussex Arch. Coll. 14, 213.

10. "Domesday Book (Saxon *dom*, tax, and *boc*, book), indisputably the most venerable monumental record possessed by any nation, consisting of two volumes which are deposited in the Chapter-house at Westminster, and preserved with great care and circumspection." *Warner*, 1789.

11. The quantity of a hide of land was never expressly determined, but it is generally estimated to be 100 Norman acres, which would represent 120 acres English measure; but in reality a hide, virgata, a Knight's fee, etc., contain no certain number of acres. "The Hide was a very old denomination of Land among the Saxons. It was mentioned in the laws of Ina." (*Libri Censualis vocati Domesday Book Indices*.) Bishop Kennett claims that hide is derived from a Saxon word signifying house or habitation—from which we also derive the word hut, for a cottage. The conjecture of Arthur Agard, a man indefatigable in his antiquarian researches, in regard to the etymology of the word, is as follows: "I do think that our nation deriving first our original from the *Trojans*, that is from the *Trotians* as some write, could not but bring from thence the same order that was observed in those countries of measuring their lands; as appears by Dido (in Virgil) who was the founder of Carthage, and coming thither by sea, bought of the Prince of that country, so much ground as she could compass with a hide, to build a city for herself and her subjects; which being granted she caused the same to be cut into small threads, and so compassed a mighty deal of land more than was expected. So our forefathers, as it should seem, did collop out the countries they dwelt in, in like sort. And the etymology of the word hide I think was drawn from Dido's act before spoken of; for you shall not find the word in any other language than ours, neither French, Latin, Italian, etc."

12. According to the register of Magdeline College, Oxford, the 3rd son of Henry of Bramshot was named "Umphrey" (Humphrey), probably for

his uncle Sir Humphrey Lyne. As he was born *circa* 1608 (matric. Feb. 28, 1622-23, aged 14), perhaps he was Capt. Humphrey Hooke, and inclined to follow the profession of his uncle Francis. "Feb. 21, 1636-7. Sir Wm. St. John to Nicholas. He entreated Sir Abraham Williams to nominate Capt. Humphrey Hooke for the command of one of his Majesty's ships for the intended voyage—if the Earl of Northumberland be the General; prays Nicholas to acquaint him of Sir William's recommendation." (Calendar of State Papers.)

13. *Pedigrees etc. of Sussex*, by William Berry.

14. "The manor and prebend of Somerleigh, in East Whittering parish, extending into the parish of St. Pancrace, near Chichester, . . . were by indenture, dated Jan. 1, 1631, demised by William Cox, Clerk prebendary of Somerleigh, to Benjamin Hooke, Alderman of Chichester," etc. (*Parl. survey M.S.S. Decan. et Capit.*)

15. There are some slight indications that Alderman Hooke belonged to the Newent, and Crooks (in Pauntley), family, who were among the gentry in Gloucestershire. The ped. of this family, in vis. of Glouc., throws no light on the subject, but it gives only a small portion of the family. Still, with very considerable additions which I get from my study of Gloucester wills, I can find no reference to Humphrey. Thomas Hooke, of this family, will 1628 (missing), left eldest son Edward (certainly *not*, however, a brother of Humphrey) who married only daughter of John Baugh of the City of Gloucester. John Baugh left long will of 7 pages and considerable estate, mentions *brother* Thomas Hooke. Thomas (father of Edward) had brothers Richard and Guy Hooke, and among his uncles were John and Thomas, but I get no further information about them or their children. If Humphrey was son of either (chances favoring one of the uncles) he would be likely to show interest in the Baugh family. "16 James (1619) vj Nov. Thomas, son of John Baugh of Bristol, soapmaker, apprenticed to Humphrey Hooke, and Cecily his wife." (Bristol App. Books.) Maj. Francis Hooke of Kittery (Maine), was apparently some connection of the Alderman's son, or grandson, and also probably from Bristol, or neighborhood. The only reference to one of that name in Bristol that I can find is the following: "1647. xxvj June. Francis Hooke, son of Thomas Hooke of Newent, Co. Gloucester, Gent., apprentice to Jonathan Blackwell, vintner, and Marie his wife." (Bristol Apprentice Books.) Our Francis, however, would appear to have been educated to the law, and as in the case of Humphrey, may have come from Chichester whence came others with the same Christian name including the prominent Capt. Francis Hooke, who commanded one of the King's ships.

16. "St. Stephens' church was built in the reign of Henry VII, by John Shipward, a merchant of Bristol. The tower, which is very lofty and beautifully proportioned, was built about the year 1470; it is one hundred and thirty three feet high, of a square figure, ornamented from the bottom up in the Gothic taste; and has been characterized by a native amateur, as 'the fairest form ever erected by the taste and skill of the last Gothic school.'" Three of the pinnacles were blown down by a hurricane in 1703, and the damage has only been partially repaired. A recent writer says: "Alas! the true admirers of the most beautiful, because the most graceful, tower in Eng-

land, have now to contemplate it as the sun, shorn of his beams." (See *Chilcott's Bristol*, p. 170.) Taylor says: "It cannot fail to be admitted that the tower of St. Stephen, ascending from stage to stage with increasing profusion of florid decoration, and finally crowned with a diadem of latticed battlements and pinnacles, is of most august and impressive proportions, and is regally superior to most, if not all of its stately brotherhood of English parish towers." (*A Book about Bristol*, by John Taylor, 1874, p. 104.)

17. As Humphrey Hooke is called "merchant," in the above entry, he must either have been the son of a merchant, which would entitle him to that designation, or have served an apprenticeship to that calling for at least seven years. His name however does not appear on the Bristol apprentice books. Perhaps he served his apprenticeship in the city of Chichester, or his father may have been a merchant there. It is possible however that he was admitted into the guild of merchants in consequence of his marriage with the *daughter of a merchant of Bristol*.

18. Writing of events in 1643, Seyer says: "Bristol was the principal seaport in the west of England, and second to none but London." (*Seyer's Bristol*.) Warburton says: "Bristol at that time (1645) was second only to London in importance; it contained about 251,000 inhabitants, and some of the wealthiest merchants in the Kingdom." (*Warburton's Prince Rupert and the Cavaliers*.) Murray says: "Bristol was for many centuries the second city in the British Dominions." In 1634, Holland and France being in league, and intelligence having been received in England that great fleets were being raised by them, considerable alarm was created, which caused an assessment to be made upon the different towns and cities of the Kingdom, in proportion to their size and wealth. *Rushworth*, under the year 1636, gives the distribution of this assessment in the different shires of England and Wales. "Bristol—one ship of 100 tons 40 men—£1000 charge." The next leaf contains a line which may interest a reader who wishes to make comparison. "Liverpoole—no ship—no men—£25 charge."

19. *Burke*.

20. Sir John Oldcastle, or Lord Cobham as he is usually styled, was probably a predecessor of the one above mentioned. He was a man of high position and influence, and renowned as a warrior, but being regarded as the head of the Lollards was accused of heretical opinions and was condemned to be executed. "He was brought to London, hung in chains, and slowly wasted to death in December 1417. Sir Roger Aston and thirty-eight other persons experienced a like fate." (*Aubrey*.) In the Epilogue to the second part of his play of *Henry the Fourth*, Shakespeare states that his Falstaff was not intended for Oldcastle, who died a martyr.

21. 1593. "x die Junij. Sepultus fuit Wil^lms Stanlack fi^l Wil^li Stanlack." (Marshfield Register.) (Note.) This may have been Mrs. Young's 2d husband, or a son of the latter. "7 James I, xxvij Nov. Anthony Standlacke, son of William Standlacke, late of Bristol, merchant. Apprenticed to Humphrey Hook, merchant, and Cecilia his wife." (Bristol Apprentice Books.) Anthony was half brother to Alderman Hooke's wife. His age in 1610 probably *circa* 20.

22. Richard Young of Bristol. Will 1581. My brother Thomas, wife

Susan, son John Young (by 1st wife) and his grandfather John Irish. Will of John Irish, 1570. Wife Edith, John Young, my daughter's son. Richard Young's 2nd wife was Susan, daughter of Wm. Pepwall, alderman of Bristol (Mayor 1567). Will of the latter, 1571. Daughter Susan, wife of Richard Young.

23. William Young married Anne, daughter of Wm. Carr, merchant of Bristol (Mayor 1560). His will, 1574. Wife Susan, son-in-law Wm. Young and daughter Anne, his wife. The latter's eldest brother was 30, in 1582-83.

24. In Basildon church, "under the East Window, lies a Gravestone. At the head thereof, in a Brass Plate, are the figures, at full length, of an aged Man in Armour, and a Woman, drest in her usual Habit, having her little Son by her, and beneath their Feet this Inscription:

"Here lyeth the Bodies of Roger Young, Esq; and William Young, Son and Heir apparent unto the said Roger, Esq; which Roger, after he had continued in the Commission of Peace, in the County of Berks, without any Intermission full 60 Yeares, departed this life at Bassilden, the iiii of March M.D.L. xxxix aetatis fuae 96. William, the Son of Roger, taking to Wyfe Katharine Barker, second Daughter of William Barker of Sunning, in Berks, Esq; by whome he had William, Sole Yssue of their Bodies, departed this Lyfe the xxivth of March M.D.L. xxxiv, aetatis fuae 26." In Sunning church, on the South side of the East window in the Chancel, is the figure of a woman, kneeling at a desk, and at the bottom the following Inscription:

"Here lieth buried the Body of Katharine Lady Litcott, late of St. Sepulchre's Parish, London, Widow, Daughter of William Barker of Sunning in the County of Berks, Esq; who was first married to William Yong, of Basseldon, in the County of Berks, Esq; by whom she had Sir William Yong, *Knight*, who married Anne, the Daughter and Coheir of Sir Richard Palet, *Knight*, and dyed without Yssue, before whose Death, the said Katharine took to a second husband Sir Christopher Litcott, *Knight*, . . . (and) departed this Life upon the 17th Day of January, in the beginning of her 77th Year of her Age, Anno Dni. 1630." (*Hist. & Antiq. of Berkshire*, by *Elias Ashmole—1736.*)

25. 'Baptisms from Christ's Church reg. Bristol.'

1580, Dec. 23, Thomas son of Thomas Yonge, Jr.

1582, Feb. 23, ffortune daughter of Thomas Yonge, Jr.

1584, Dec. 17, Sicelye daughter of Thomas Yonge.

1586, May 28, Anne daughter of Thomas Yonge." (Doubtless "sister Mrs. Alice Gostlett" was born Stanlake.)

26. Queen Elizabeth granted this manor to Thomas Ratcliffe, earl of Suffolk, and lord chamberlain, for his good service against the rebels in the north. The earl sold the manor to John Gostlett, John Chambers, Nicholas Webb, and Thomas Cripps. "Wm. Gostlett, Esq. (grandfather of Mrs. Hooke), was lord of the manor in 1608, from whom it descended to John Harrington of Kelston, in Somersetshire, Esq., whose mother (Ellena, 4th wife of John Harrington, Sr.) was daughter and heiress of Mr. Gostlett" (*Rudder*). The Mr. Gostlett referred to (whither known to Rudder or not) was Benjamin, son of Charles Gostlett, great-grandson of William Gostlett, above mentioned, 2d cousin (probably also 1st cousin-in-law of Alderman

Hooke's children, and probably step-son of Mrs. Hooke's sister Mrs. Alice Gostlett).

27. Cicely (Young) Hooke had an aunt Alice Gostlett, but according to the will of Cicely she had a sister (Alice Young), or, more probably, a half sister (Alice Stanlake), who probably married a Gostlett cousin, becoming "Mrs. Alice Gostlett." Charles Gostlett however was apparently the only Gostlett of suitable age to be found, certainly the only Gostlett cousin of that generation living, and quite likely Alice Young (or Stanlake) was his fourth wife, and the one whose identity seems not to have been fully determined. She was probably first married to ——— Reynolds, and second to Charles Gostlett. There can be little doubt I think that she was "——— widow of ——— Reynolds of Gloucester," stated to have been the fourth wife of Charles, in Visitation of Glouc., 1682-83. Charles Gostlett died about 1643, aged 60. If Mrs. Alice Gostlett was his widow she must have been so for about 17 years when mentioned in will of her sister Mrs. Humphrey Hooke, and have been at that time aged about 70, or 7 years younger than her second husband whom she must have married after 1635, in which year the third wife died. Benjamin, the second son of Charles Gostlett (by his third wife) speaks in his will, in 1661, of his cousin Ann Stanlake, who was probably a daughter of Anthony Stanlake, half brother of Cicely (Young) Hooke. She is mentioned in Alderman Hooke's will. If Mrs. Alice (Young—or Stanlake) Gostlett was Benjamin's step-mother, he might call Ann Stanlake his first cousin, otherwise she would have been his second cousin, in which case mention of her in his will would seem unlikely. Charles Gostlett, first cousin of Cicely (Young) Hooke (and probably also her brother-in-law), had elder son John, who married Mary, daughter of John Harrington and Lady Dionessa Legh, daughter and co-heiress of Rt. Hon. James, Earl of Marlborough. Mrs. John Gostlett's first cousin, young Lord "Ley", afterwards 3d Earl of Marlborough, was here for a short time. Sir Henry Vane took him over to Noddles Island (East Boston) to call on Maverick who at that time was associated with William Hooke in the Agamenticus patent. Mrs. John Gostlett's grandfather James was the 1st earl, her uncle Henry the 2d earl, and her uncle William the 4th earl of Marlborough.

The following pedigree, continuing the Gostlett pedigree already given, will throw light on the points above given.

Pedigree beginning with Charles Gostlett, great-grandson of John, from Vis. of Glouc., 1682-83, to which I have added, in parentheses, births and burials from Marshfield records, and annotations.

Sir John Harrington, of Kelston, was educated at Eaton, and Christ Church College, Camb., and studied law at Lincoln's Inn. Queen Elizabeth was his godmother. He married Mary, daughter of Sir George Rogers of Cannington, Somerset, in 1584, and entertained Queen Elizabeth at Bath in 1592. He was a miscellaneous writer of considerable ability, and had the reputation of a great wit, and shrewd man of the world. Elizabeth called him "that saucy poet, my godson."

John, Lord Poulett, son of the 2d Mrs. Charles Gostlett's cousin, was the 5th Marquess of Winchester (1628-74), Earl of Wiltshire, and Baron

CHART V

CHARLES GOSTLETT of Marshfield, Glouc., son and heir (of Wm.) ob. *circa* 1643, aet. 60.

m. Ursula, dau. of Leonard Bennet of Eblye juxta Stroud. 1st wife. (Buried Sept. 24, 1620.)

m. Catherine, dau. of Wm. Poulett of Cottells, Co. Wilts, Esq. 2d wife. (Buried July 23, 1625.) (Wm. Poulett was grandson of *William*, 1st Marquis of Winchester, and nephew of *John*, 2d Marquis.)

m. ——— Widow of ——— Short of London, merchant, 3d wife (1635. "j" die Maij. sepulta fuit Mrs. Marie Gostlett vxor Caroli Gostlett, Esq.") (Mary Gostlett, alias Short, of Marshfield, Glouc. adm. granted June 16, 1638-39, to her son John Short of St. Catherine Cree Ch. London, Gent.

m. ——— Widow of ——— Reynolds of Gloucester. 4th wife. (Probably Mrs. Alice (Young or Stanlake) Reynolds, 1st cousin of her 2d husband, surviving him and living in 1660.)

—JOHN GOSTLETT of Marshfield, Co. Glouc. *circa* 58, and s.p. 1683. (More likely *circa* 56.)

m. Mary, dau. of John Harrington of Kelston, Co. Somerset (by the Lady Dionise, his wife, dau. of *James* (Ley) Earl of Marlborough), son and heir of Sir John Harrington, Kt.

—BENJAMIN GOSTLETT, d. in Bath, *circa* 1663. (Born in Marshfield, Nov. 7, 1632.)

m. Elizabeth, dau. of Dr. Chetwyn Dean of Bristol by his wife ——— dau. of Sir John Harrington, Kt.

—(Eldest child and heir) Ellena (4th) wife of (her mother's 1st cousin) John Harrington, of Kelston, Co. Somerset. (Brother of Mary (wife of John Gostlett), and grandson of Sir John Harrington, Kt., and of *James* (Ley) 1st Earl of Marlborough.)

Hooke's children, and probably step-son of Mrs. Hooke's sister Mrs. Alice Gostlett).

27. Cicely (Young) Hooke had an aunt Alice Gostlett, but according to the will of Cicely she had a sister (Alice Young), or, more probably, a half sister (Alice Stanlake), who probably married a Gostlett cousin, becoming "Mrs. Alice Gostlett." Charles Gostlett however was apparently the only Gostlett of suitable age to be found, certainly the only Gostlett cousin of that generation living, and quite likely Alice Young (or Stanlake) was his fourth wife, and the one whose identity seems not to have been fully determined. She was probably first married to ——— Reynolds, and second to Charles Gostlett. There can be little doubt I think that she was "——— widow of ——— Reynolds of Gloucester," stated to have been the fourth wife of Charles, in Visitation of Glouc., 1682-83. Charles Gostlett died about 1643, aged 60. If Mrs. Alice Gostlett was his widow she must have been so for about 17 years when mentioned in will of her sister Mrs. Humphrey Hooke, and have been at that time aged about 70, or 7 years younger than her second husband whom she must have married after 1635, in which year the third wife died. Benjamin, the second son of Charles Gostlett (by his third wife) speaks in his will, in 1661, of his cousin Ann Stanlake, who was probably a daughter of Anthony Stanlake, half brother of Cicely (Young) Hooke. She is mentioned in Alderman Hooke's will. If Mrs. Alice (Young—or Stanlake) Gostlett was Benjamin's step-mother, he might call Ann Stanlake his first cousin, otherwise she would have been his second cousin, in which case mention of her in his will would seem unlikely. Charles Gostlett, first cousin of Cicely (Young) Hooke (and probably also her brother-in-law), had elder son John, who married Mary, daughter of John Harrington and Lady Dionessa Legh, daughter and co-heiress of Rt. Hon. James, Earl of Marlborough. Mrs. John Gostlett's first cousin, young Lord "Ley", afterwards 3d Earl of Marlborough, was here for a short time. Sir Henry Vane took him over to Noddles Island (East Boston) to call on Maverick who at that time was associated with William Hooke in the Agamenticus patent. Mrs. John Gostlett's grandfather James was the 1st earl, her uncle Henry the 2d earl, and her uncle William the 4th earl of Marlborough.

The following pedigree, continuing the Gostlett pedigree already given, will throw light on the points above given.

Pedigree beginning with Charles Gostlett, great-grandson of John, from Vis. of Glouc., 1682-83, to which I have added, in parentheses, births and burials from Marshfield records, and annotations.

Sir John Harrington, of Kelston, was educated at Eaton, and Christ Church College, Camb., and studied law at Lincoln's Inn. Queen Elizabeth was his godmother. He married Mary, daughter of Sir George Rogers of Cannington, Somerset, in 1584, and entertained Queen Elizabeth at Bath in 1592. He was a miscellaneous writer of considerable ability, and had the reputation of a great wit, and shrewd man of the world. Elizabeth called him "that saucy poet, my godson."

John, Lord Poulett, son of the 2d Mrs. Charles Gostlett's cousin, was the 5th Marquess of Winchester (1628-74), Earl of Wiltshire, and Baron

John of Basing, Premier Marquess of England, and Hereditary Keeper of Pamber Forest. He was born in 1597, educated at Exeter College, Oxford, and died March 5, 1674. "At the beginning of the civil wars he held Basing for King Charles as long as a single stone of the noble mansion remained; but the house, after a protracted seige, falling into the hands of the Parliamentarians, was burnt to the ground, and the Marquess' property in plate, jewels, etc., destroyed to the amount of £200,000" (*Burke*). In 1673 he was living at Hook-Park, Dorset. (See *Blome's Britannia*, 1673.)

28. *Thornton's Pemaquid*.

29. From an ancient M.S. for several generations in possession of the Fust family of Hill Court, Gloucestershire, first published in 1876.

30. *Thornton's Pemaquid*, p. 16, and *Hakluyt's Voyages*, Vol. iii.

31. State Papers, Colonial Series, VI, I.

32. *English Merchants*, by H. R. Fox Bourne. A Bristol privateer brought home from Juan Fernandez the real Robinson Crusoe; and Bristol was the first city in the Kingdom to establish regular steam communication with the United States, the first voyage having been made by the *Great Western* in 1838 (Encl. Brit.). William Appleton, Esq. of Boston, son of Hon. William Appleton and Mary Hooke, wrote me that he made a voyage in the *Great Western* in 1840, and dropped anchor in the Severn just opposite Alderman Hooke's (former) manor of Kingsweston. He says: "We steamed up to Bristol in the smallest steamboat I have ever seen. Railroads were not fairly underway then, and part of our journey to London was by stage coach, and part by rail."

33. The great writer and philosopher "Lord Bacon," eight years later Lord Chancellor of England. His subsequent titles were Baron Verulam, and Viscount St. Albans.

34. See act of Parl. 8th Elizabeth.

35. "The armament prepared for resistance of the Spanish Armada in 1588, comprised only thirty-seven of Queen Elizabeth's own ships, with fourteen others hired by her for this special work; whereas the whole fleet numbered one hundred and forty-three vessels of all sizes." . . . the English merchants, and other private citizens, furnishing nearly one hundred ships at their own expense. "In nearly all the great naval battles of the sixteenth century, and the first half of the seventeenth, indeed more than half the fighting was done by merchant ships." *English Merchants*, by H. R. Fox Bourne. At the time of the Armada "the navy did not exist as a profession. It was the Queen's policy to appear as little as possible in any work that had to be done, and leave it to privateers." Froude's *History of England*.

36. All the commissions at this period seem to have been issued (perhaps intentionally) under this general heading; although the ships thus commissioned were chiefly employed in conducting hostilities against both France and Spain, then at war with England.

37. Speaking of the size of the ships used in the commerce of those days, General *Lefroy*, late Governor of the Bermudas, says: "The largest ship appears not to have exceeded 350 tons; while the small size for ocean navigation of many of the others is surprising. For example: The 'Ship or Catch,' *Speedwell*, of Salem, New England (1657), 20 tons; the 'ship or

vessel,' *Blessing*, 30 tons; a 'Catch' of Providence, N. E., 30 tons; a French ship, not named, 40 tons; a ship from Barbadoes, 40 tons; the ship *Charles* of Bristol, 80 tons (1644)."

Nov. 3, 1628. Letter of Mayor of Bristol to the Council. Wm. Owfield, Capt. of a man-of-war of this port, lately took a small French *man-of-war* of 20 tons, having on board 28 men. Recommends Capt. Owfield, and requests directions what to do with the captured Frenchmen. (State papers in her Majesty's public record office.)

At the time of the Armada (1588) "the largest ship in England . . . belonging to a private owner did not exceed four hundred tons, and of vessels of that size there were not more than two or three sailing from any port in the country." (*Froude's Hist. of Eng.* 12, 427.) Speaking of the cost of the Queen's ships, Froude says: "The *Rainbow*, a ship of five hundred tons, was set afloat fit at all points for the sea for two thousand one hundred pounds; the *Vanguard*, also of five hundred tons, for two thousand six hundred pounds—or allowing for the difference in the value of money about thirteen thousand and sixteen thousand pounds respectively."

In a Shipping Register kept at the Bermudas there is entry, says *Lefroy*, of "an incident of the Civil War, the operation of which upon the high seas is not much regarded in general history. The ship *Charles* of Bristol, of the burden of fourscore tons, was taken by Capt. Robert Taylor by commission, and by him sold to Capt. William Johnson (Jackson), and by him sold to Capt. Bartholomew Preston, 1 Jan. 1644-5; and by him again sold to Vincent Rayner, August 12, 1646, with all the appurtenances belonging to the ship, with vituals and all other things aboard; 'except two gunns with carriages and the bread now upon the said ship and half a barrell of powder.' . . . This capture must have been made before the news of the surrender of the City of Bristol to the Royal forces in July 1643 had reached the West Indies, as it is hardly to be supposed that its citizens would be exposed to lose their property by sea after their reduction" (*Lefroy's Memorials of Bermudas*, 1. 716). *Lefroy* here assumes that the ship must have been captured by the Royalists, while the contrary is quite likely to have been the case. There can be no doubt about it, if this was the ship "*Charles* of Bristol of 80 tons," belonging to Humphrey Hooke, 'commissioned by Charles I, some years before, under "Letters of Marque to take Pirates." Taylor's commission was probably issued by Parliament. Jackson, to whom he sold, held a commission from Cromwell. That ships hailing from a port in the possession of the King's forces were liable to capture by ships belonging to the adherents of Parliament is shown by the following entry in Common's Journals: "29th Aug. 1643. Ordered, That the *Bristol* Ship, taken by some of my Lord of Warwick's Fleet, be fourthwith sent hither with her Freight: And that the Ship, Ordnance, Tackle and Fright, be sold by a Candle (chandler—in this case, I presume, a ship chandler), and the Proceeds employed for the Use of the Navy."

38. Public Record Office.

39. *Ibid.*

40. Rushworth.

41. Encl. Brit.

42. Macaulay.
43. *Ibid.*
44. Encl. Brit.
45. See answer of Charles II, Feb. 29, 1664, to petition of Sir Humphrey Hooke, Sir Robt. Cann, Sir Robt. Yeamans, and others. *State Papers (Domestic)*.
46. Mathews, p. 79.
47. The Mayor was chosen from among those who had held the office of Sheriff. The sheriffs in their turn from members of the common-council; and the latter, as already stated, were selected by the Mayor and two of the Aldermen.
48. This comparison is quoted from a lively lady writer of recent date.
49. See Taylor's *Bristol*, and Lanell's *Port Improvement Question*.
50. "Had it not been for the group of devoted men among whom Sir Francis Drake was foremost, there was imminent danger three hundred years ago that human freedom might perish off the face of the earth" (John Fiske).
- Don Diego de Pimental testified that the Spanish intended "to occupy the whole Kingdom of England—to keep the English Queen a prisoner," etc., etc. "The invasion of England by Spain had been most portentous. . . . We feel an inexpressible satisfaction that at this great crisis of England's destiny, there were such men as Howard, Drake, Frobisher, Hawkins, Seymour, Winter, Fenner, and their gallant brethren, cruising that week in the Channel. . . . There was little preparation to resist the enemy once landed. . . . It is only too true that the land-forces were never organized until the hour of danger had, most fortunately and unexpectedly passed by. . . . The Invincible Armada was driven out of the Channel by the courage, the splendid seamanship, and the enthusiasm of English sailors and volunteers; . . . and the great storm of the 14th and 15th of August at last completed the overthrow of the Spanish." (Motley's *United Netherlands*.)
51. "The passion for colonial traffic was so strong that there was scarcely a small shopkeeper in Bristol who had not a venture on board some ship bound for Virginia or the Antilles." Macaulay's *History of England*.
52. Motley's *United Netherlands*, 4, 104.
53. His account of his voyage, published by John Partridge in 1633, and printed by John Legatt, London, is entitled "The strange and dangerous voyage of Captain Thomas James in his intended discovery of the North-west passage into the South Sea." A copy of this book (very scarce) in the possession of Ch. Jos. Hertford, Esq., has an M.S. note as follows: "This portrait of Capt. James has occasioned the destruction of many copies of the book by the *Grangerites*. Three guineas, Harding assured me, have been given for it. He re-engraved it, and that cannot now be had. I have in vane searched for a Portrait of this certainly great seaman in the Council-House and Merchant's Hall."
54. Corry's *History of Bristol*.
55. He was son of Sir Hugh Smith, and nephew of Lord Gorges. His daughter Florence Smith afterwards married Alderman Hooke's grandson Sir Humphrey Hooke, High Sheriff of Gloucestershire.

56. "A rude engraving in 'Barrett's Bristol,' exhibits, against the street side of All Saints' Church, in Coon Street, a covered collonade known as the Tolsey. This, until superseded by the Exchange, served from the year of its erection in 1583 as a 'Rialto' for merchants to transact their business, and many a venturous enterprise on great waters has been here originated." (*Taylor*.) The fame of the Bristol Tolsey was known to Sir Walter Scott, and in the "Pirate," the Captain of the "Good Hope of Bristol," tells Mor-daunt, of the fine luck his vessel had on the Spanish main, both with commerce and privateering, and adds "my name is Clement Cleveland, captain and part owner, as I said before; I am a Bristol man born . . . my father was well known on the Tolsell . . . old Clem Cleveland of the College Green." (*Pirate*, 1, chap. viii.) "The brazen tables in front of the exchange formerly belonged to the Tolsey. They were used by the merchants there assembling for making payments, writing letters, etc., and from their form were sometimes called 'nails,' which is said to have given origin to the frequent phrase 'to pay down on the nail.' On a ribband beneath the surface of one is inscribed, 'Thomas Hobson of Bristol made me, Anno 1625. Nicholas Crisp of London, gave me to this honorable city in remembrance of God's mercy in Anno Domini 1625, N.6' On the ring round the surface appears the following: 'Praise the Lord, O my soul, and forget not all his benefits'" (*Taylor*, 280). Another table bears date 1631.

57. The new Mayor always took office on Michaelmas day, which occurs on the 29th of September. Richard Aldworth, Esq., who succeeded Mr. John Lock as Mayor of Bristol, and assumed that office in Sept. 1642, was a strong partisan of the Parliament, as his subsequent record demonstrates. He was a mercer in the High street of Bristol, and a partner of John Young. He was chosen Sheriff during the Mayoralty of John Gunning in 1627, and was captain of the trained bands from 1629 to 1640. After his removal from the Mayoralty by his royalist associate in Dec. 1642, he became, with Fiennes and others, a member of the Parliamentary Military Committee of the city, and as such wrote a letter to Parliament, describing the Yeoman's plot. He held the office of Colonel in the Parliamentary army for a time, and was probably not in Bristol when that city was surrendered to the King's forces, as he was with Sir William Wallar at the battle of Lansdown in July 1643, shortly before his successor, Mayor Hooke, is recorded as "walking bare-headed" before the King at the public reception to his Majesty Aug. 6, 1643. He wrote a letter to Parliament describing the Lansdown battle. Warburton says: "Colonel Fiennes himself in print confesses, complaining that Sir William Wallar had lately drawn 2900 l., and twelve hundred men out of Bristol, besides his own horsemen, now lately defeated" at Devizes (which supplemented the Lansdown battle), from whence they retreated to Gloucester. The position of the Royalist forces under Prince Rupert prevented their return to Bristol. (See Prince Rupert and the Cavaliers) (59). After the recapture of Bristol by the Parliamentarians in 1645, Richard Aldworth became M.P. for that city (26th Jan. 1645-46) in place of Sergeant John Glanville, removed, and retained his seat until 1653, being succeeded by his son Robert in 1654.

58. *Hist. and Antiq. of Bristol*, by William Barrett, 1789.

59. When referred to by his Parliamentary associates, Col. Aldworth was frequently called Mayor Aldworth, even after his removal from the mayoralty, which shows that they were far from acquiescing in the act of the corporation. The Parliamentary military authorities however evidently stood at that time in considerable awe of the civil authorities of the city, and were not inclined to actively oppose them in the conduct of municipal matters.

60. Parliamentary Chronicles, p. 278, cited by Corry.

61. Corry.

62. Corry.

63. Seyer's *History and Antiquities of Bristol*, p. 381.

64. "This parcel of ground, the Marsh," says the *Norwich Tourist* of 1633, "is a pleasant and delightful place, and with as much art added thereto as can conveniently be, both for walks, a bowling green, and other recreations for the rich merchants and gentle citizen, adorned with many fair trees, wherein constantly the city captains drill and muster, and exercise the city forces. Near three parts thereof is surrounded by the river, which divides itself from the main stream at the very point of the Marsh, which causeth a sweet and pleasant echo of their martial music, drums, fifes, and volleys of shot: the one arm whereof (the frome which ebbs 40 feet) runneth betwixt that and the minster, next Gloucestershire, which is the principal *Key and wharf*, where all their fayre and rich shipping lie, even to the bridge; the other stream (the Avon) runs through the city, next Somersetshire; downe to Bath, over which is built a fayre stone arch bridge, with handsom neat houses (on the bridge), (and ships on either side thereof) like a street, which may for its length compare with London."

"Bristow, the Merchants' Magazine, enclos'd
With rocky hills, by Avon's stream embrac'd;
Faire by industrious workmanship compos'd,
As by great Nature's wisdom firmly plac'd;
Viewing her verdant March, may well disdaine
Rome's sometime glory, Mars his champean plaine."

(*Dove: or passages of Cosmography*, by Richard Louch, A. D. 1613, p. 46.)

65. "Colston Hall (school for boys), on St. Augustine's Back, stands on the site of the Carmelite Friary, which being abolished, was superseded by what is known as the Great House, where resided Sir John Young, who here received Queen Elizabeth and her court. In 1642 (and for a number of years previously), the house was inhabited by *Sir Ferdinando Gorges*. The Prince of Wales (Charles II), slept here in 1645" (Taylor, p. 331). The Quay is on one side and St. Augustine's Back on the other side, of the narrow stream called the Frome, a branch of the Avon, which bisects the city at this point. Colston's School has recently been removed from the above mentioned site which is now occupied by the Salvation Army barracks.

66. "Westward of the Drawbridge is College Green, a green spot in a gray city, a spot that has not yet lost all right to its ancient title of Bellswick, or beautiful place. . . . College Green has been eminently a preaching place. . . . On Corpus Christi day, 1486, Alcock, Bishop of Worcester, preached here before Henry VII, and a noble company in the presence of the Mayor and 'all the processions of the town.' . . . Chatterton says that Mrs. Newton, his

sister, would frequently walk in College Green with the young girls that paraded daintily there to show their finery. An old Bristol Guide book is made to inform us that 'the fair sex here are truly fair, and England cannot produce finer and more beautiful women than the city of Bristol' " (Taylor, pp. 332-3).

67. Seyer.

68. Chilcott, p. 42.

69. Edward Colston, the great philanthropist, born in Temple St. Bristol, in 1636.

70. The words in brackets were interpolated by Seyer, in 1816, in his quotation from Dallaway.

71. Chilcott, p. 42.

72. Ibid.

73. *Taylor*, p. 282.

74. Royalists.

75. "In 'Walker's Sufferings of the Clergy' is to be found a biographical sketch of Richard Towgood, who was sequestered Feb'y 10, 1654, from the vicarage of St. Nicholas, for his loyalty and firm adherence to the royal cause. On account of his pertinacity in preaching and praying against the Parliament, he was, besides being deprived of his living, several times committed to prison, and was even condemned to be shot to death, and it was not without much difficulty that this sentence was reversed. When imprisoned in the Castle of Bristol, his sentence was to remain there without fire or light or the allowance of any friend to visit him. At the restoration he was made Dean of Bristol, and on the death of Dr. Ironside in 1671 he was offered the bishopric which he refused. He died April 21, 1683, in the 89th year of his age, having been sixty years a preacher in Bristol" (Taylor).

76. The rebel army entered Bristol Sept. 11, 1645. The fourth day thereafter, being the day for the election of the civil officers, the corporation sent a message to Sir Thomas Fairfax asking who he desired should be elected Mayor. The General replied that they should follow the ancient custom; whereupon they elected Mr. Creswick. This election however was not satisfactory to the military authorities, and on the 21st of October following, the mayor and twelve more of the corporation were removed "*because they were for the King*, and John Gunning was sworn in Mayor. Among the ejected members were *Alderman Hooke* and *Alderman Long*." (MS. Calendars.) See subsequent note regarding MS. Calendars (79).

77. Burke gives a list of "Gentlemen chosen by King Charles II, to be invested with the order of the Royal Oak, and the value of their respective estates, A. D. 1660. (From a MS. by Peter Le Neve, Norry.) This order of Knighthood (was) projected by the restored monarch to perpetuate the loyalty of his faithful adherents." In this list, under head of Gloucestershire, appears: "Sir Humphrey Hooke, baronet" (?). Estate valued at £1500 per annum. (Burke's *Hist. of the Commoners*, Vol. 1, Appendix.)

78. Burke.

79. MS. Calendars.

"For the consideration of the rites and liberties of the Kalenders of the fraternitie of the Church of All Saints in Bristow, who were a brotherhood

consisting of clergy and laymen, and kept the ancient records and mynamente, not onely of the Towns, but also of other societies in other remote places of the kingdom. In consideration whereof there was a commission sent from Walter, bishop of Worcester, and Robert Harell rector of Dirham and Deane of Bristow, dated the 18th day of the kalenders of June anno 1318, to warne all persons that had any charters, mynuments . . . concerning the . . . fraternities of the Kalenders, to bring them in, and also to enquire the truth of the same, in respect that most of the charters, writings, and records were lost and embezeled away, by reason of fire that happened. . . . The beginning of which fraturntie did then exceed the memory of man" (Taylor).

80. MS. Calendars.

81. Taylor.

82. The dower of the Princes of Portugal consisted of the fortress of Tangier, the island or peninsula of Bombay, where the city of that name now stands, and half a million pounds sterling in money. The acquisition of the fortress of Tangier was valued much more highly than that of Bombay, where now stands the second city in size in the British empire. In fact the latter was very generally despised, being so little esteemed that in 1668 it was transferred to the East India Co. for an annual payment of £10.

83. MS. Calendars (Adams). See *Seyer*, 2, 514.

84. MS. Calendars. See *Seyer*, 2, 518.

85. Hanham Court (see view of north front given in frontispiece) is beautifully situated, on rising ground above the northern bank of the River Avon, in the southwestern corner of Gloucestershire, nearly midway between Bath and Bristol.

"At the time of the Domesday survey (1086) Hanham (therein called *Hanum*), situate in Sineshovedes Hundred, was held by Herulfus de Heading in capite, Humbaldus holding it of him as sub-tenant. It contained half a hide, two carucates being held in demesne. There were 8 bordarii and 4 servi." (*Glou. N. 2.*)

Hanham Court became the property of Francis, and his son Henry (afterwards Sir Henry) Creswick, Alderman Hooke's son-in-law, in 1638. It then passed from Sir Henry to his son Francis (grandson of Alderman Hooke), and remained in possession of the Creswick family for over two hundred years—from 1638 to 1842.

86. MS. Calendars.

87. James probably had pleasant memories of his entertainment in Bristol by Mr. Creswick's father in 1643. He was then ten years of age, and the demonstrations of loyalty to his father, at that time in Bristol, doubtless made a strong impression on his mind; he was therefore not averse to showing some courtesy to Sir Henry's son.

88. Hugh Brain was perhaps son of Henry Brain of London. Taylor, in speaking of the church of St. Peter, says: "At the Dissolution the living passed into the hands of Henry Drain, merchant tailor of London, the purchaser of St. Peter's and many other Bristol churches."

89. The royal touch was supposed to cure scrofula, or king's evil. "This singular superstition had existed from a very early time both in England and France. The English Kings were supposed to have inherited the power

from Edward the Confessor" (Lecky). 'It is stated that Charles II performed the ceremony 8500 times in a single year, and touched nearly 100,000 persons during his reign. The belief was almost universal in the efficacy of the proceeding, which generally consisted in touching the afflicted with the sign of the cross accompanied by some short service or prayer, and many apparently most wonderful cures were related. The Assembly of the N. H. province in 1687, was requested to grant assistance to one of the inhabitants of Portsmouth to make the long journey to England to obtain the benefit of the royal touch.

90. Francis Creswick, eldest son of Henry, of Bristol, equitis, Magdalen coll., matric. 2, Mch., 1663-64, aged 19. (Foster's *Alumni Oxonienses*.)

91. This was perhaps an error in copying, as he was 34 years of age in 1679. Bapt. St. Ewen's church, Bristol, May 2, 1645.

92. The Long Parliament was in existence from Nov. 3, 1640 to Apr. 20, 1653.

93. Gradually the new members, "Recruiters," were elected, "above Two Hundred and thirty of them in all." (Carlyle, 1, 219.)

94. Commons Journal, Nov. 28, 1642. "Upon a Letter of divers of the Deputy Lieutenants of the County of *Gloucester*, dated at *Cirencester*, *November 18*; It is Resolved, upon the Question, That Sir *Rich. Dacre* Baronet, Sir *H. Fred Tinne*, Sir *Robert Points*, *Tho. Veale*, and *Humphrey Hooke*, Esquires, shall be forthwith sent for, as Delinquents, for opposing, and showing themselves obstinate in the Ordinance of Melitia."

95. An ordinance of the 6th Feb'y. 1646-47, established commissioners of sequestration to sit at Goldsmith's Hall to compound with delinquents. The amount received from all those who compounded for goods and personal property was £1,305,299; there was also received from sequestrations £6,044,924; and further from the composition of estates £1,277,266.

96. "The city (Bristol) gives £140,000 by way of composition to save them from plundering." (Warburton's *Prince Rupert and the Cavaliers*.)

97. Mr. Hooke's estates were to be included among those of other prominent and wealthy Royalists in an act then being drafted entitled "Lands and Estates forfeited for Treason, to be sold," which act was finally passed in 1651.

"At first the Royalists were admitted to compound for their estates, . . . but as time went on, and feelings became more bitter, and passions more fierce, the fines were made heavier" (*M. C. W. Peacock*—London Index Soc. pub.). Finally the extreme measure of confiscation against the more prominent Royalists was undertaken. In regard to this latter step Peacock says: "It is scarcely possible to say how far the authorities were guided by the motive of preserving the Commonwealth from constant warfare within herself, and how far they were moved by the desire of obtaining money for the Navy, payment of the long standing arrears of the Army, and other State expenses, without incurring the odium of still heavier taxation. The latter motive has been attributed to them not only by the Royalist writers, but by others whose feelings have been strongly on the winning side."

98. Perhaps Cromwell's private chaplain, and first cousin (by marriage), the Rev. William Hooke, formerly of the Massachusetts colony, and the sup-

posed son of Alderman Hooke's first cousin, may have secured the writing of this letter.

99. "By this, all the Line from Pryor's Hill Fort to Avon (which was a full mile) with all the forts, ordinance and bulwarks, were possessed by us;—save one wherein were above Two-Hundred and twenty men of the Enemy; which the General summoned, and all the men submitted." (Letter of Cromwell to Speaker of the House, Sept. 4, 1645.)

100. Warburton says: "Bristol was indeed surrendered, on the most favorable conditions it is true, and it is also true that its further defence would only have involved the slaughter of the garrison, and the destruction of the town." (*Prince Rupert and the Cavaliers.*)

101. Taylor.

102. Taylor.

103. A "manor, in English law is an estate in land to which is incident the right to hold certain courts called courts baron," presided over by the lord of the manor, in which the free tenants of the manor are suitors. A manor arises where the owner of a parcel granted or supposed to be granted by the crown (and who is called in relation thereto the lord) has in turn granted portions thereof to others who stand to him in the relation of tenants. Of the portion reserved by the lord for his own use (his demense) part was occupied by villeins, with the duty of cultivating the rest for the lord's use. These were originally tenants at will, and in a state of semi-serfdom, but they became in course of time the copyhold tenants" (*Encycl. Brit.*). This copyhold tenure of land (in which the tenant has nothing to show but the copy of the rolls made by the steward or bailiff of the manor), with its often unjust fines levied by manorial courts on succession or transfer, still survives. Free or common socage is still another and a more definite form of tenure.

Inquisition taken at Gloucester 14th Oct. 1641: "The messuage & 14 acres of land meadow and pasture, situate in Lawrence Weston, in the tenure of Thomas Holwaie. . . are held of Humphrey Hooke, Esq., in free & common socage as of his manor of Kingsweston by fealty & suit at the court of the manor of Kingsweston."

Long after Feudalism had ceased many of its effects remained. "Manchester was only freed by Statute in 1758 from an obligation to grind corn and grain at the manorial water-mills. So late as 1809, that great city had to obtain the consent of the lord of the manor before a company could be incorporated to provide a water-supply. Leeds had to pay in 1839 a sum of thirteen thousand pounds in order to extinguish feudal dues for grinding corn" (Aubrey). Other monopolies still continue. The most notable instances being "Covent Garden Market, owned by the Duke of Bedford, and the great market in Sheffield; a lucrative source of income to the Duke of Norfolk" (Ibid.).

104. Berkeley Manuscripts by John Smyth of Nibley.

105. It would seem from Mr. Hooke's will, and other testimony, that another owner (Tobie Edmonds) should have appeared in Mr. Smyth's MMS. between the time of Sir Edward Winton's ownership and that of Alderman Hooke. Bond 10th April 1620: "Joan Cable of Bristol, widow, & Thomas Grigg of the same, salter, to William Clatterbrook of Slymbridge,

clothier, for £60; conditioned to observe arbitration of Tobie (Edmonds) of Kings Weston, gentleman." (*Glouc. Notes and Queries*.) Mr. Smythe's account may be correct, in the main, however, as Mr. Hooke's will gives the impression that Mrs. Edmond's estate, called the little manor of Kings Weston *alias Weston Lawrence*, and purchased from her by Mr. Hooke (who settled the succession, subject to the life interest of his wife, upon the heirs of his son Thomas, except certain tenements therein which were to go to the heirs of his son Thomas by the latter's second wife Mrs. Jackson) was only a small portion of the manor of Kings Weston as then owned by him, which in its entirety was a very extensive domain. Mr. Hooke appears to have owned this larger portion with full right of alienation and to have bequeathed it to his male heirs forever, in default of male heirs of his grandson Humphrey, but subject to a life interest, first of his wife, and second of his grandson Humphrey. In England "the rule of law is that all persons living at the date of settlement may be restricted to mere estates for their own lives, instead of taking the fee simple with full right of alienation. In this way each son when he succeeds finds himself merely a tenant for life, and as such possessed of no power to prevent his own son from becoming owner in fee simple when he in turn shall succeed. . . . The system of entails or of creation of estates for life only . . . has . . . prevailed for several centuries in the United Kingdom" (*Encl. Brit.*).

106. The Duke of Beaufort in writing to the new owner of Kingsweston in 1685 says: "Y^r house . . . has one of the pleasantest prospects both for Sea and land that I have seene. Y^r friends are the more beholding to you when you can for their Sakes be content when from it, and then in w^{ch} obligation must be cone^d by

y^r affectionate humble servant

Beaufort"

107. The will of Alderman Hooke bequeaths this estate, in default of male heirs of Sir Humphrey, to "the heirs male of me Humphrey Hooke forever." My impression is that Thomas Hooke, son of Sir Humphrey pre-deceased his father, but he may not have done so, in which case he would have been owner of Kingsweston in fee simple, and could have conveyed, and probably did convey to Sir Robert Southwell in 1679. If he were not alive, the ownership under the will, and by the law of inheritance, would, it seems to me, have vested in Sir Hele Hooke, son of Sir Thomas. If Sir Hele had pre-deceased his father the New England grandson William Hooke apparently would have been the owner. "The English law of inheritance creates a double preference . . . in favor of the male over the female, and of the *first born* among the males. This necessitates the *rule of representation* by which the issue of children are regarded as standing in the place of their parents. This is called 'representative primogeniture.' The rule appears to have been firmly established in England during the reign of Henry III, though its application was favored as early as the 12th century" (*Encl. Brit.*).

108. Dame was "originally the English title of honor for a woman, but particularly for the mistress of a family, being by rank a lady; the wife of a knight or baronet; . . . still used in English law to signify a lady" (*Worcester*). "That proud *dame*, the lord-protector's wife" (*Shak.*).

109. The goldsmiths of that day correspond to the bankers of the present time.

110. Sir William Berkeley, one of the owners of this manorial estate "was attainted of high Treason, by parliament, for partakinge with king R. 3. slaine (1485) in battell at Bosworth field." Smythe's Manuscripts.

111. Mr. Smythe says: "Adioininge to the north side of this parish of Slimbridge, parted by a small river, is the parish of fframton upon Severne in the hundred of Whitstane, nowe the inheritance of Humphry Hooke a merchant of Bristoll, late by him purchased of John Arundle of Lanheron, Esq."

112. Collections of Ralph Bigland, Esq., Carter principal King of Arms.

113. Ibid.

114. Rudder's Gloucestershire.

115. Collections of Ralph Bigland, Esq., Carter principal King of Arms.

116. Ibid.

117. Spelled "Burrus" (St. Werburgh reg.), "Burries" (will of Alderman Boucher), and "Burrowes" (will of Wm. Langton).

118. John Boucher of Bristol, alderman, will 1621. My wife *Mary*. My *youngest* son John Boucher. William Burries my wife's son. (Showing that wife Mary was formerly Mary Burrowes, widow.)

John Boucher, merchant, son of John Boucher late alderman of Bristol, deceased, will 1641. My *mother* Mary. My *sister* (half sister) Mrs. Joan Langton. Brothers George and Phillip. My *brother-in-law* Mr. Hooke (Thomas).

William Langton (son of Joan Langton) of Bristol, merchant, will 1654. Land left me by my *uncle* Wm. Burrowes, Gent. (Langton was probably god-son or namesake of his mother's brother.)

John Langton Jr., sheriff of Bristol in 1634 (with his brother-in-law Thomas Hooke), married, in 1625, "Joan Burrowes, dau. of Mrs. Mary Boucher" (*Langton ped.* by Crisp). They were father and mother of Sir Thomas Langton.

119. Whitehall, Dec. 5, 1661. Dispensation to Sir Humphrey Hooke, high sheriff of Gloucestershire, to be absent from the country upon his necessary occasions. Minute. (*Pub. Rec. Office.*)

120. This parliament met May 8, 1661, and continued until Jan. 24, 1678.

121. After Sir Ferdinando Gorges, and Thomas Smith, Esq., with their forces had been refused admittance into Bristol, in 1642, by the mayor, they returned to Wells; but being opposed by the Parliamentarians, were driven Aug. 6th by superior numbers to Sherborne. From thence they retreated into Wales, where Mr. Smith was taken ill and died (at Cardiff), his body being brought back to Long Ashton for burial. By Florence, daughter of John, Lord Poulett, he had son Sir Hugh Smith, baronet, and four daughters: Florence, Mary, Helena, and Anne. His widow married Thomas Pigott, Esq. (*Collinson's Somerset*; and Burke, *Extinct Peerage.*)

Colonel Thomas Pigott of Long Ashton, Somerset, Esq. *Will* dated March 31, 1670. Proved Feb. 23, 1673-74, by Florence Pigott, the relict (23 Bunce). To be buried according to the Liturgie of the Best Reformed Church in the World, the Church of England. To Elizabeth Pigott, as a

marriage portion, £1500 out of my rents at Westmeath, Ireland. My sons-in-law (step-son, and step-son-in-law) Sir Hugh Smith, Sir Humphrey Hooke, and their wives. My daughters-in-law (his step-son's wife) Mrs. Elizabeth Smith (daughter of John Ashburnham, of Ashburnham, Esq.), Mrs. Helena Smith, and Mrs. Ann Smith (his unmarried step-daughters). Lord Poulett (his wife's nephew, John, 3d Baron Poulett—1665 to 1680), and brother-in-law Francis Poulett (brother of John, 2d Baron Poulett—1649 to 1665).

Col. Pigott says: "Mrs. Helena" etc., in referring to his unmarried step-daughters. When a school girl (a gentleman's daughter under the age of ten) became a woman (i.e. passed her tenth year) it was formerly the custom, in the case of single, as well as married women, to drop the *Miss* for *Mrs.* (contraction of Mistress), just as *Master*, in its present acceptation, is now dropped for *Mr.*, when the school boy becomes a man. If Mrs. —— were single, the term spinster was added, when considered necessary, as in the entry of a marriage license and the like. Some difficulty in addressing strangers might be avoided if we had retained the former significance of *Mrs.* (excepting only its exclusive application to people of quality), and could use that prefix as we now use *Mr.*

122. Lord Poulett (born about 1585, and died March 20, 1649) was one of the "popular" noblemen named by the King to treat with the Scots at Ripon. He and his son were active royalist commanders during the civil war. He was son of Sir Anthony Poulett (Gov. of the Isle of Jersey, as were his father and grandfather before him, and, like his father, Commander of the Guard to Queen Elizabeth) by Catherine, daughter of Henry, 1st Lord Norris De Rycote. Lord Poulett's grandfather, Sir Amias Poulett, was ambassador to the King of France in 1576. He was one of the principal Keepers of Mary, Queen of Scots (123). Lady Hooke's uncle Francis Poulett (one of her mother's brothers) married Catherine, daughter of Robert Creighton, Bishop of Bath.

123. Queen Elizabeth wrote to him in Aug. 1586 as follows: "Amyas, my most faithful and careful servant, God reward thee treblefold in three double for thy most troublesome charge so well discharged. If you knew, my Amyas, how kindly, besides dutifully, my greatful heart accepeth and praiseth your spotless actions, your wise orders, and safe regards, performed in so dangerous and crafty a charge, it would ease your travails and rejoice your heart. . . . With my most loving adieu, and prayers for your long life, your most assured and loving sovereign, as thereto by good deserts induced.
E. R."

124. This from monument in St. Stephen's church to memory of Sir Humphrey Hooke and his immediate family. She must have been a year older or younger than this, unless a twin with her brother Sir Hugh Smith bart. who according to *Burke* was born Apr. 21, 1632.

125. Sept. 23, 1629, Sir Ferdinando Gorges married, for his 4th wife, Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Thomas Gorges, and widow of Sir Hugh Smith of Ashton Court, County of Somerset. She died in 1659. This Sir Thomas Gorges, "a gentleman of the Court," was the one who arrested Mary, Queen of Scots, and her two secretaries, by order of Queen Elizabeth in Aug. 1586, and led her a prisoner to Tixall.

126. Elizabeth Gorges was great-granddaughter of Sir Edmund Gorges, by Anne Howard daughter of the Duke of Norfolk, great-grandson of Lady Elizabeth (wife of John, Lord Mowbray), great-granddaughter of Edward I, King of England. Lord Mowbray was in the 9th generation from Walter Gifford, Earl of Buckingham in 1084.

Will of Dame Elizabeth Gorges of Long Ashton, co. Somerset, widow. Dated 18 Sept. 1657. To my grandchilde Thomas Smyth sonne of *my Sonne* Thomas Smyth late of Long Ashton Esquire *deceased* £200. My daughter in law fflorence *nowe* wife of Thomas Pigott Esquire. (P. C. C. *Pell* 303.)

127. Sir John Newton by his first wife was grandfather of Thomas Cake, Earl of Leicester.

128. At that time, in England, says Macawlay, "the only army that the law recognized was the militia. That force was remodelled by two acts of Parliament, passed shortly after the restoration. . . . The array of the counties was commanded almost exclusively by Tory noblemen and gentlemen. They were proud of their military rank, . . . and the name of standing army was hateful to them. One such army had held dominion in England; and under that dominion the King had been murdered, the nobility degraded, and the landed gentry plundered, the Church persecuted. There was scarcely a rural grandee who could not tell a story of wrongs and insults suffered by himself, or by his father, at the hands of the Parliamentary soldiers. One old Cavalier had seen half his manor house blown up. The hereditary elms of another had been hewn down. A third could never go into his parish church without being reminded by the defaced scutcheons and headless statues of his ancestry, that Oliver's redcoats had once stabled their horses there."

129. Thomas Butler, Earl of Ossory, was eldest son of James, Duke of Ormonde. He was one of the two witnesses selected by the Duke of York (James II) to his marriage with Anne Hyde. At the coronation of James, he was one of the young noblemen appointed to bear the King's mantle, and as such challenging the place before Lord Percy, eldest son of the Duke of Northumberland.

130. Vis. of Glouc. 1682-83 (Harl. Soc.), gives the name *James* Dymer, eldest son and heir of John Dymer of Bristol, and Redlands in Westbury-upon-Trim, instead of *Isaac* Dymer, but this on its face would appear a mistake, as it would make two sons by the name of James (by the same wife), both living in 1683. A similar situation has been known to exist, but the Clifton record is of course conclusive. Children in 1683: Humphrey, aet. 5; John, aet. 2; Florence, aet. 3.

131. Scrope was the family name of the earls of Wiltshire and Sunderland, and the barons of Bolton, Masham, and Upsal. *Burke* says: "The great baronial house of Scrope had an unbroken male descent from the Conquest, if not from the time of Edward the Confessor." In 1389, Lord Scrope, earl of Wilts, was captured in the castle of Bristol by Bolingbroke, after a siege of four days, and with others beheaded in the centre of the town, where then stood the high cross. In Shakespeare's *Richard II*, is a scene wherein Bolingbroke denounces these minions of the falling cause, and orders Lord Northumberland to see them dispatched. A few years since an unsuc-

CHART 1

1. The first part of the report...

2. The second part of the report...

3. The third part of the report...

4. The fourth part of the report...

5. The fifth part of the report...

cessful attempt was made in the House of Lords to revive the peerage of Wilts, which included the right to wear a kingly crown in the Isle of Man, that peerage having been dormant from the time Sir William Scrope lost his head. It is a little singular that Bristol castle, with the walls and all the fortifications of the city, should have been finally destroyed by one of this same family, Col. Adrian Scrope (father-in-law of Mary Hooke), the last governor of the castle. The order for this destruction was given by Cromwell, because, according to *Ludlow* (Memoirs ed. 1894, 1, 394), he did not dare (referring to Scrope) to "trust a person of so much honour and worth with a place of that importance," and was executed in 1655 with so much rigor, "that few traces of its masey walls remain" (*Evans*). Connection with the Castle of Bristol seems to have been ominous of fatality to the Scropes. Col. Scrope, soon after at Charing Cross, suffered the fate of his illustrious predecessor. Adrian Scrope was son of Robert Scrope of Wormsley, Oxfordshire, a younger branch of the Scropes of Bolton. Matriculated at Hart Hall, Oxford, Nov. 7, 1617. Student Middle Temple 1619. In Nov. 1624 he married Mary, daughter of Robert Waller of Beaconsfield, a cousin of the poet Waller. He was colonel (1647) of a regiment of horse in parl. army, and was made governor of Bristol castle Oct. 1649, which post he held until 1655. He was M. P. for Linlithgow, Sheriffdom, 1659-60. Oct. 12, 1660, he was tried as one of those who signed the King's death warrant. He defended himself with great dignity and moderation, pleading that he acted by authority of Parliament, and that he "never went to the work with a malicious heart." Sir Orlando Bridgeman, the presiding judge treated Scrope with great civility. "Mr. Scrope," he said, "to give him his due, is not such a person as some of the rest." He was executed at Charing Cross on the 17th of October (hanged, drawn, and quartered) but his remains were not treated with the indignity shown to the other victims, but were delivered to his family for burial. An account of his behaviour in prison, and at the gallows, describes him as "a comely ancient gentleman," and dwells on his cheerfulness and courage. (See Lee's Dict. of Biog.) The following is part of the Scrope pedigree given in *Blore's Rutlandshire*, p. 198.

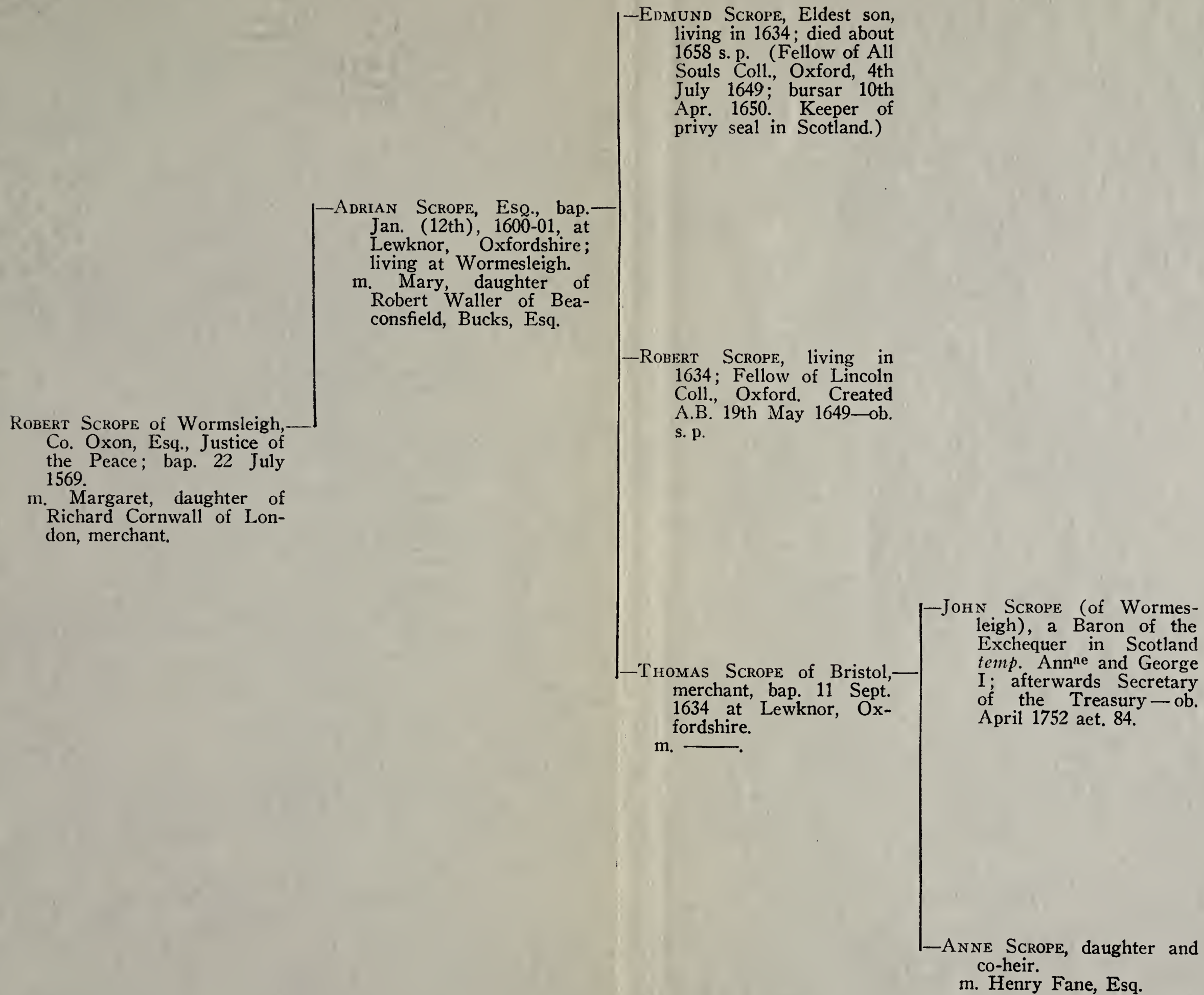
132. At Westbury-upon-Trim. "To the Dear Memory of Anne, Wife of Henry Fane of Bristol, Gentleman, who departed this Life, the 26th day of July 1721."

133. Henry Fane died Dec. 19, 1726, aged 58. His grandfather, Francis Fane, was 3d son of Francis, 1st Earl of Westmorland, by Mary daughter of Sir Anthony Mildmay of Apethorp, Northumb. The 1st Earl was son of Sir Francis Fane by wife Lady Mary Nevile, Baroness Le Despencer, daughter and heir of Henry, Lord Abergavenny, by Frances, daughter of the Earl of Rutland.

134. Wm. Swymmer married Mary, daughter of Sir Thomas Langton, the latter of whom was 1st half cousin of Mary (Hooke) Scrope.

135. On the Great Western Road (towards London) from Salisbury to Bagshot, passing through Andover and Whitchurch, we reach Worting, about forty-five miles from Salisbury. On the left is Worting House;

CHART VI



cessful attempt was made in the House of Lords to revive the peerage of Wilts, which included the right to wear a kingly crown in the Isle of Man, that peerage having been dormant from the time Sir William Scrope lost his head. It is a little singular that Bristol castle, with the walls and all the fortifications of the city, should have been finally destroyed by one of this same family, Col. Adrian Scrope (father-in-law of Mary Hooke), the last governor of the castle. The order for this destruction was given by Cromwell, because, according to *Ludlow* (Memoirs ed. 1894, 1, 394), he did not dare (referring to Scrope) to "trust a person of so much honour and worth with a place of that importance," and was executed in 1655 with so much rigor, "that few traces of its masey walls remain" (*Evans*). Connection with the Castle of Bristol seems to have been ominous of fatality to the Scropes. Col. Scrope, soon after at Charing Cross, suffered the fate of his illustrious predecessor. Adrian Scrope was son of Robert Scrope of Wormsley, Oxfordshire, a younger branch of the Scropes of Bolton. Matriculated at Hart Hall, Oxford, Nov. 7, 1617. Student Middle Temple 1619. In Nov. 1624 he married Mary, daughter of Robert Waller of Beaconsfield, a cousin of the poet Waller. He was colonel (1647) of a regiment of horse in parl. army, and was made governor of Bristol castle Oct. 1649, which post he held until 1655. He was M. P. for Linlithgow, Sheriffdom, 1659-60. Oct. 12, 1660, he was tried as one of those who signed the King's death warrant. He defended himself with great dignity and moderation, pleading that he acted by authority of Parliament, and that he "never went to the work with a malicious heart." Sir Orlando Bridgeman, the presiding judge treated Scrope with great civility. "Mr. Scrope," he said, "to give him his due, is not such a person as some of the rest." He was executed at Charing Cross on the 17th of October (hanged, drawn, and quartered) but his remains were not treated with the indignity shown to the other victims, but were delivered to his family for burial. An account of his behaviour in prison, and at the gallows, describes him as "a comely ancient gentleman," and dwells on his cheerfulness and courage. (See Lee's Dict. of Biog.) The following is part of the Scrope pedigree given in *Blore's Rutlandshire*, p. 198.

132. At Westbury-upon-Trim. "To the Dear Memory of Anne, Wife of Henry Fane of Bristol, Gentleman, who departed this Life, the 26th day of July 1721."

133. Henry Fane died Dec. 19, 1726, aged 58. His grandfather, Francis Fane, was 3d son of Francis, 1st Earl of Westmorland, by Mary daughter of Sir Anthony Mildmay of Apethorp, Northumb. The 1st Earl was son of Sir Francis Fane by wife Lady Mary Nevile, Baroness Le Despencer, daughter and heir of Henry, Lord Abergavenny, by Frances, daughter of the Earl of Rutland.

134. Wm. Swymmer married Mary, daughter of Sir Thomas Langton, the latter of whom was 1st half cousin of Mary (Hooke) Scrope.

135. On the Great Western Road (towards London) from Salisbury to Bagshot, passing through Andover and Whitchurch, we reach Worting, about forty-five miles from Salisbury. On the left is Worting House;

behind this near half a mile is Tangier Park. Eleven miles further is Bassingstoke. (*Survey of County of Hants.*)

136. I make the date six days earlier than is given by Burke. "1662 July 16," Grant to Thomas Hooke of Flanchford, Surrey, of the dignity of a baronet, with the usual discharge. (*Pub. Record Office.*) The warrant appears to have been issued the day he came of age. "1662 Hampton Court July 7," Warrant for creating Thomas Hooke of Flanchford, a Baronet (*Ibid.*).

137. Reference to the Lord Chancellor on the Petition of Mr. Hooke to be excused from being High Sheriff of Hampshire, to which he was nominated by the King. (*Pub. Rec. Off.*)

138. Lincoln's Inn is one of the Inns of Court, which are voluntary non-corporate legal societies located in London. The Inns of Court, properly so called, are and always have been four, namely, Lincoln's Inn, the Inner Temple, the Middle Temple, and Gray's Inn. Ferne, a writer of the 16th Century, referred to by Dugdale, states that none were admitted into the Inns of Court, "except they were gentlemen of birth." Lincoln's Inn stands on the site, partly of an Episcopal palace erected in the time of Henry III, by Ralph Nevill, bishop of Chichester and Chancellor of England, and partly of a religious house, called Black Friars House in Holborn. The library—a collection of law books, the most complete in the country—owes its foundation to a bequest of John Nethersale, a member of the society in 1497, and is the oldest of the existing libraries in the metropolis. (*Encl. Brit.*)

139. Sir William Thomson, in the reign of Charles II, was one of the Commissioners for his Majesty's Customs.

140. Whitehall, Aug. 12, 1663. Pass for Sir Thomas Hookes to go beyond seas and return. (*Pub. Rec. office.*) Whitehall, Aug. 12, 1663. Pass for Sir Thos. Hookes to go to France. Minute. (*Ibid.*)

141. May 31, 1687. William Dyer of Newham, Herts, Esq., widower, and Anne Hooke, Spinster, 17, daughter of Dame (blank—should be Elizabeth) Hooke of Tangier Park, County of Southampton, widow, who consents; at St. Anne, Blackfriars, or St. Giles, Cripplegate, London, or St. Mary Savoy, Middlesex. (*Marriages in Faculty office of the Archbishop of Canterbury, in London.*) June 27, 1684, Dyer as a bachelor, age 25, had married Mary Hayward (*Ibid.*). He was second son of Sir William Dyer of Tottenham High-Cross, in Middlesex, baronet, by his wife Tomasine Swinnerton, grand-daughter and heir of the famous Sir John Swinnerton, knt., lord mayor of the city of London, a younger branch of the ancient and noble family of Swinnertons of Shropshire, formerly peers of the realm. (*Wotton's English Baronstage.*) A sister of Wm. Dyer, Esq. (Sir Thomas Hooke's son-in-law), married John Hooke, of Gaunts House, Dorsetshire, barrister.

142. "The old court suburb," Kensington.

143. "1683 July 2, Sir Hele Hooke of Tangier, Hants, Bart^t Bach^r abt 21 (with consent of his mother and guardian) and Esther Underhill of St. Mathew, Friday st. London Sp^r abt 20, with consent of her father; Alleged by Chas. Seward, Curate of Kensington Midd.; at Kensington or Knightsbridge Midd. (*Marriage Allegations in Reg. Vicar-General of Arch. of Canterbury.*)

144. *Harl. Soc. Coll. VI, 146.*

145. Burke, in speaking of the family of Hele, says: "Of this very ancient family, fruitful as the County of Devon is known to have been in distinguished houses, it may with truth be stated, that it was one of the most eminent, the most widely spread, and the most affluent that even that quarter of England could boast of." It dates back, it is presumed, to long before the Conquest. "The herald's visitations commence with Sir Roger De La Hele in the reign of Henry III, fifth in descent from whom, through several knights named Roger and Nicholas, was William De La Hele who left two sons, Nicholas and Roger."

146. *Harl. Soc. pub. VIII.*

147. In 1676 every proprietor in the East India Company received a bonus equal to the value of his stock, and the shares, which, in 1664, were to be bought at £70 for £100 worth of stock, rose in 1667 to £245, in 1681 to £300, and in 1691 to £360 or more. (*Fox Bourne.*)

148. Perhaps named for Sir Thomas Hooke, his uncle, rather than for Thomas Scrope, his father. However he bore the name of the former and was his sister's eldest son and for the latter reason perhaps if not for the former, got a remembrance not accorded to his brother John who was then nine years of age and was perhaps named for his ancestor Sir John Hele. Mary Scrope, named for the mother and sister of Sir Thomas, received more than the other Scrope nieces, as in the case of niece Mary Aldworth; and probably for a like reason.

149. Perhaps he was Rev. John Collins (1632?-1687), pastor of the church in Lime St., London, in which street resided Sir Thomas Hooke's father-in-law. He was born in England but was educated in America. Grad. at Harvard 1649. He was probably the clergyman who officiated when Sir Thomas Hooke was married. In 1659 he acted as chaplain to Gen. Mckn whom he accompanied from Scotland to London. Is described as a good preacher, and man of catholic spirit. He died Dec. 3, 1687. Perhaps he was a cousin of Sir Thomas Hooke. His father was possibly the son Collins mentioned in Alderman Hooke's will, and his mother was perhaps Fortune Hooke.

150. Worcester says of cousin, "formerly applied to any kinsman, or blood-relation."

151. Will of Michael Pindar (the elder) of London, Oct. 11, 1646. Proved May 19, 1647. Wife Mary. Children (quite young) Michael et als. Wife sole Executrix. Father-in-law Richard Aldworth of Bristol, Alderman, and brother, Robert Aldworth of Lincoln's Inn, Esq., Overseers.

152. Rudder.

153. Sir Ralph Sadler (1507-1587), diplomat, gentleman of the King's privy chamber, and Secretary of State, was appointed by Henry VIII one of the council to assist the executors of his will, and the guardians of the young King Edward VI. Under Elizabeth he was High Treasurer of the Army, one of Cecil's most trusted agents, and guardian of Mary Queen of Scots. He "was at once a most exquisite writer, and a most valiant and experienced soldier, qualifications that seldom meet. . . . Little was his body, but great his soul" (Lloyd, *State Worthies*). He was reputed the richest commoner in England.

154. When in Bristol, in 1891, I saw in the Merchants' Hall the portrait of Alderman Jackson, to which I have referred, but I had hoped to find there many portraits of the old merchants, with possibly one of Alderman Hooke. I was told that they had been removed to the Council House. On going thither I was unfortunate in finding that they had been taken from their frames (to which latter, I presume, names were attached), and the frames sent to the burnishers for regilding. I was permitted to examine the paintings which were heaped one upon another, but they were distinguished only by numbers to aid in returning them to their proper frames.

155. Sir Edward Alford, 2d son of John of Offington, Sussex, was M.P. for Steyning, 1628-29; Tewkesbury, 1640 (void because twice); Arundel 1640. Disab. to sit Jan. 22, 1643-44. Knighted at Whitehall 8th Dec. 1632. An active Royalist, inc. in capitulation of Exeter 1649. Heavily fined by Parl. Married 1st, Mary, daughter of Viscount Campden, and 2d Ann, daughter of Clement Corbet, L.L.D., Chancellor of Norwich. Lady Ann Alford (mother of John M.P.) died 4th Feb. 1692, aged 74.

156. While on the subject of Alderman Jackson, it may be stated that in Suffolk Deeds (Boston) is recorded a Power of Attorney (dated Feb. 14, 1651) from Joseph Jackson and Hugh Browne (mayor 1650), two of the aldermen of the "Cittie of Bristoll," to William Stratton of said Bristol, mariner, to collect debts due them in New England. This enabled them to obtain execution against John Thompson in the sum of £218 7s. 10d., and "the Iland Called Tompson's Iland to satisfie as farre as it will goe, . . . May 21, 1652."

"The 24:3:mo 1652. Seized the Iland Called Tompson's Iland according to the ternure of this execution etc. Edward Michelson
M^rshall."

"Tompson's Iland w^{ch} Lyeth neare the Castle Iland in the Massachusetts Bay," was appraised "to be worth one hundred and fiftie pound Sterling and no more," by Robert Sedgwick and Richard Sprague, 29th 4, 1652 (Suff. Deeds, 3, 101-2).

157. "1608, xiiij June. Giles Elbridge, son of William Elbridge of the City of Gloucester, apothecary. Apprentice to Robert Aldworth and Martha his wife." (Bristol apprentice Books.)

158. William Penn, uncle of Sir William Penn, and great uncle of the latter's son William Penn the founder of Pennsylvania, was apprenticed to John Aldworth of Bristol, merchant, 6, Aug. 1596, and was admitted a burgess 5 June 1607.

159. Registry of St. Peters destroyed.

160. It is somewhat surprising that the supposed "draft . . . never written out," of the will of Giles Elbridge, found at Oxford and published in the *N. E. Hist. & Gen. Register*, and by Mr. Salisbury in his *Elbridge Memorial*, should have been made to serve as the only evidence extant of that instrument, and that Mr. Waters should have concluded that it was never registered, when a true copy of the will (as here published verbatim) might have been found in Bristol without great difficulty. If the Oxford paper is the original instrument, the transcript therefrom, published as above mentioned, is sadly mutilated, since it omits a very essential portion covering

by far the largest specific money bequest, and showing that the testator had at least four more children than his chronicler here supposed.

161. *Statute Merchant* (Eng. Law). A security for a debt acknowledged to be due, entered into before the chief magistrate of the trading town, pursuant to a statute by which not only the body of the debtor might be imprisoned and his goods seized in satisfaction of the debt, but also his lands might be delivered to the creditor till out of the rents and profits of them the debt be satisfied. If the creditor held the lands of a defaulting debtor he was termed "tenant by statute-merchant." This form of security is now obsolete in practice. (*Worcester, Whishaw, Burrill.*)

162. Etc. or Et cetera.

163. From these Gunnings was descended John Gunning, Esq., the father of Lady Elizabeth, relict of James, Duke of Hamilton and Brandon. Lady Elizabeth was created Baroness Hamilton on the 20th of May 1776, but had previously (March 3, 1759) married (second) his Grace, John, fourth Duke of Argyle, who was raised to the Peerage Dec. 20, 1766, with the title of Baron Sundridge (*Collins' Peerage VII, 454*). The Baroness Hamilton's brother John Gunning was a general in the army, and Deputy Adjutant General in North Britain. He was in Boston with his regiment in 1775, and took part in the attack made upon the intrenchments at Bunker's Hill, showing great personal bravery (*Ibid.*).

164. Sir Robert Cann's sister Anne Cann, married Thomas Wilkins, Esq., of Llanblithian, in Glamorganshire, prothonotary of the Counties of Glamorgan, Brecon, and Radnor.

165. Sir Dudley North was appointed Commissioner of Customs, and afterwards Commissioner of the Treasury, but "on the accession of James II, he entered Parliament as member of Banbury, and at once his ready wit and great experience, heartily devoted to the service of the Tories, made him the financial leader of the House of Commons. His plan of levying additional imposts on sugar, tobacco, wine and vinegar, was regarded as a triumph of statesmanship, and secured for King James an income of £1,900,000 in the year 1685" (*Bourne*). Macaulay says: "The old members were amazed at seeing a man who had not been a fortnight in the House, and whose life had chiefly passed in foreign countries, assume with confidence, and discharge with ability, all the functions of a Chancellor of the Exchequer." He died Dec. 31, 1691, when only fifty years of age.

166. In Westbury-upon-Trim, Gloucestershire. "Here lyeth the Body of Mary, the wife of Thomas Richardson of this parish, merchant, who departed this life the 29th day of May, Anno 1689. Also William, Son of said Thomas Richardson who departed this Life the 15th July 1691." Joyce (2d wife) died Jan'y 13, 1717-18. Thomas (the merchant) died 4, Nov. 1722, aged 75.

167. John Hellier was living in 1743 aged 90 (Bigland).

168. Will of Humphry Hellier, of Iwood, Congresbury, Somerset, Gent. Proved Oct. 16, 1705, by Ann Hellier (formerly Ann Jones of Greenham, Somerset), the relict. My half brother Thomas Richardson, Gent., etc.

169. Murray's English Guide Book.

170. Taylor, p. 282.

171. Taylor.

172. Ibid.

173. This sugar house or refinery, in 1689, became the property of Edward Colston, the famous merchant and philanthropist of Bristol, son of Alderman William Colston, who with Alderman Hooke and Long, and others, was removed by the Parliamentarians in 1645, but who was reinstated in 1660. Edward Colston's partners in the sugar business were Richard Beacham, of London, Sir Thomas Day, and a Captain Wade, who in his youth had started an ideal colony in New Jersey, but who, more lately, had been implicated in Monmouth's rebellion against James II, and narrowly escaped execution.

174. Russel, Greenleaf, and Gerry families are descended from Thomas Elbridge. His grand-daughter Elizabeth married Thomas Gerry, ancestor of Elbridge Gerry, Harvard College, 1762, signer of the Declaration of Independence and Vice President of the United States. From him comes the word gerry-mander.

175. Samuel Creswicke, son of Henry of Morton Hinmarsh (Morton-in-March, Gloucestershire, where Sir Henry Creswicke's mother was born), arm. Pembroke coll., matric. 6 Apr. 1709, aged 16. B.A. 1712; fellow of Worcester coll., M.A. 1715; B. and D.D. 1727; rector of St. James, Bristol, chaplain to George II, 1729; vicar of Marden, Wilts, 1738; dean of the Cathedral church of Wells 1739, until his death 13 Jan. 1766. (Oxford Matricula and J. Foster.)

176. Will cited in "*Elbridge family*," by *Edward Elbridge Salisbury*. The second marriage of Giles Elbridge, and the connections above noted were evidently unknown to Mr. Salisbury.

APPENDIX TO PART II

APPENDIX TO PART II

177. Encl. Brit.

178. "The Council established at Plymouth, in the County of Devon, for the planting, ruling, and governing of New England in America. It consisted of forty noblemen, knights, and gentlemen, among whom were the Duke of Lenox, the Marquis of Buckingham, the Earl of Arundel and Warwick, and others scarcely less distinguished in the history of that period." Maine Hist. Col., v. 2, p. 40.

Mr. Deane says: "Thirteen were peers, some of the highest rank." The charter of the Council for New England was the foundation of all the grants that were made of the country upon which titles to land now rest. Maine Hist. Col., v. 2, p. 41. The charter bears date Nov. 3, 1620.

179. Son of Richard Aldworth of London, and nephew of Thomas Aldworth, M. P. for Bristol 1586-87, mayor 1592. Robert Aldworth was sheriff of Bristol in 1596, and mayor in 1606.

180. Encl. Brit.

181. "Capt: John Smith's first voyage to this coast in 1614, gives a peculiar interest to Monhegan (the first land he discovered) as his rendezvous while surveying the coast for the now oldest extant map of New England. . . . He intended to plant a colony here, if he had been successful in the whale fishery." Thornton's Pemaquid, p. 28. Smith places Monhegan "among the remarkablest Iles and Mountains, for land markes."

182. Williamson, v. 1, p. 241.

183. It will be noticed from the above date, February 29, 1631, which was near the close of the year 1631 (O. S.), that said February 1631 (O. S.) according to the reckoning of our forefathers, was a *leap-year* month instead of February 1632 (O. S.), or as we express it 1632-33 or 1633. The Agamenticus patent in which Mr. Hooke was interested cannot now be found. I have therefore given an abstract of the Pemaquid patent, because as indicated by the Council records, they were both identical in form.

184. Johnston, in referring to the Indian deed "Samoset" to John Brown, says: "The precession and conciseness of this first deed of conveyance of American soil, written at Pemaquid, and the neat and compact formula of acknowledgment, drawn up by Abraham Shurt, and still adhered to in New England, word for word, are interesting to the jurist. There is no precedent for the acknowledgment or the formula, and *Mr. Shurt*," in the words of the late Mr. Nathaniel J. Bowditch ("the highest authority on such a subject"—Mass. Hist. Reg. V., xlvi), "*is well entitled to be remembered as the father of American conveyancing.*" See Johnston's *History of Bristol and Bremen*, p. 57.

185. My reasons for this conclusion regarding the relationship of Robert Knight will appear later.

186. "*Robert Knight of Brystol, Mrchant,*" releases "Capt Francis Champernoon" from all debts, "dutys—clames & demands w^{ch} I have—from the beginning of the world to the day of the date hereof." June 13, 1648. Recorded Dec. 2, 1657. York Deeds, 1, 62.

187. Thomas Cammock, "the founder of Scarboro," and a nephew of the Earl of Warwick, is the only one of the five witnesses to the delivery of possession regarding whom anything of consequence seems to have been known by historical writers. Johnston says (p. 75): "Barksted, Newman, and Knight were probably residents at Pemaquid or the immediate vicinity"; their history "cannot now be traced." The name Christopher Burnhead, as it appears in the version of the grant which I have transcribed, is probably difficult to decipher in the original manuscript. Johnston calls it Christopher Barksted. As the name is not again found in this country, I think it may have been written by the Quaker, *Christopher Birkhead*, perhaps a seafaring man, possibly the one in charge of the shallop left by the English ship which brought Mr. Hooke to this country, and perhaps returned to England shortly after, who at a time of Quaker persecution, in 1654, "was moved to go to Stephen's Steeple-house (in Bristol) where he began addressing the Priest, 'thou son of pride.' . . . He was sent to Bridewell and kept there 9 or 10 days." Seyer's Bristol, II, 478.

188. Winthrop, 11, 125.

189. See Deposition York Deeds, 1, pt. 11, 14.

190. Robert Knight, born about 1585 (see above deposition), and Mrs. Eleanor Norton, will I think prove to have been children of one of Robert Aldworth's brothers-in-law, either Edward or Matthew Knight of Bristol. Another Robert Knight (younger) who married in Boston the widow of Thomas Crumwell, the rich privateer, was probably the son of the first mentioned Robert Knight's first cousin Edward Knight, son of Francis Knight of Bristol, another brother-in-law of Robert Aldworth.

191. La Tour is believed to have been a Huguenot, but however this may have been it was evidently difficult for some of our Puritan ancestors to imagine that Frenchman and Papist could be otherwise than synonymous.

192. Savage's Winthrop, 1, 125.

193. At this period, and for at least a hundred years after, "there was great punctiliousness in the application of both official and conventional titles. Only a small number of persons of the best condition (always including ministers and their wives) had the designation of *Mr.* or *Mrs.* prefixed to their names. *Goodman* and *goodwife* were the appropriate addresses of persons above the condition of servitude, and below that of gentility. Most of the Deputies are designated in the records by their names only, without a prefix, unless they were deacons of the church, or officers of the militia, in which latter case they received the title of their rank, in all the degrees from general to corporal." *Palfrey's New England*, 1, 300.

In giving a list of the inhabitants of Charlestown, seventy-two in number, in 1736, Frothingham says: "The reader will notice the title of *Mr.* prefixed to a few of the names. This almost invariably indicates, in records of this period, a person of consideration, as much, or perhaps more than 'Hon.' does at the present day. It appears that there was but one 'Esq.' in town, and he ranks above the ministers." Hutchinson says: "Not more than dozen of the principal gentlemen took the title of Esquire, and in a list of *an hundred freemen*, generally men of substance, *there are not more than four or five distinguished by Mr.*" The spirit of caste was very strong in those

early days, which probably accounts for the care taken in the application of these various titles. People of different ranks were also distinguished by their dress. The General Court, in making a law to regulate the dress of people in the different grades of society, expressed "its utter detestation that men of mean callings and condition should take upon them the garb of gentlemen."

194. Williamson, 1, 245.

195. Hazzard's Coll., 1, 298.

196. Haliburton, 1, 55.

197. Williamson, 1, 246.

198. Winthrop, 2, 108.

199. One of the poet Whittier's most spirited legendary poems, entitled "St. John," is descriptive of an episode in the romantic history of La Tour. The poet describes Charles of Estienne, lord of La Tour, leaving his fort of St. John well garrisoned, and in charge of his "lady," while he sailed away to Pemaquid and Monhegan for "Dun-fish" and "call," but finding on his return that his French rival D'Aulney from Port Royal, had attacked and demolished his fort, slain his garrison, and made a prisoner of his wife, who had defended her charge most gallantly, but had soon after died of grief. The poet then describes La Tour stung to madness at the scene around, when

"He sprang on the deck
Of his shallop again
'We cruise now for vengeance!
Give way!' cried Estienne."

"Massachusetts shall hear
Of the Huguenot's wrong,
And from island and creekside
Her fishers shall throng!
Pentagoet shall rue
What his Papists have done,
When his palisades echo
The Puritan's gun."

"O, the loveliest of heavens
Hung tenderly o'er him,
There were waves in the sunshine,
And green isles before him:
But a pale hand was beckoning
The Huguenot on;
And in blackness and ashes
Behind was St. John."

200. Thornton's Pemaquid, 73.

201. This statement is based upon the following given by Winthrop: "The Governour received a letter from Capt. Neale that Dixey Bull and fifteen more of the english that kept about the east, were turned pirates, and had taken divers boats, and had rifled Pemaquid." Savage's *Winthrop*, 1, 91.

202. Error.

203. Winthrop, 1, 94.

204. Ibid., 1, 97.

205. Winthrop, 1, 94.

206. Thornton.

207. Ibid.?

208. Of course any such abandonment of Pemaquid, as suggested, would look very unreasonable in view of Mr. Thornton's estimate, that there were, at this time, between five and six hundred settlers there. (Thornton's *Pemaquid*, p. 65.) Thornton's estimate however appears to be based upon Sullivan's statement that the settlers numbered eighty-four families, which may be incorrect, as Sullivan is very inaccurate in many of his statements. If there were eighty-four families, exclusive of the fishermen, as Sullivan states, it seems hardly probable that, at this early period, in a pioneer settlement, they would represent five hundred or six hundred people. Moreover, it seems highly improbable that the adult males, to be found in a settlement of five or six hundred people, well armed and provided with means of defence as they were in those days, would allow themselves to be plundered and so thoroughly frightened by but *fifteen* pirates, that they must send to Neale at Piscataqua, and even to Massachusetts Bay for assistance.

209. The significance attached to the word *pirate* by our forefathers, especially by those of peaceful habits who went "beyond seas," is probably not generally understood. For several generations it had been one of the chief words of evil import in the language. His Satanic Majesty himself, black as he was then painted, failed to inspire an equal degree of terror since there were some well defined rules for circumventing the latter. But the Turkish and Algerine pirates, who swarmed the seas, frequently venturing into the English and Irish channels, made slaves of their Christian captives (as did the so-called Christian Spaniards for that matter) frequently chaining them to the seats of their galleys, where, as the "chain gang," or rowers—the living engine in the waist of the galley, they were the especial aim of the enemy's artillery, the object being to render the opponent vessel, with the least possible delay, a useless tub upon the water. Many of these galleys were of 250 slave power, carrying in addition a force of 400 fighting men. The famous Sultan Barbarosa is said to have employed 30,000 Christian slaves for three years in the construction of the mole for his ships in the port of Algiers. We may well imagine that the unruly children of Christian nations in those days, after listening to the frequent recital of horrors perpetrated by these piratical monsters, were not infrequently threatened with delivery into their hands unless they mended their ways (the potency of fear as a remedial agency being at that time more esteemed than at present), so that dread of pirates quite likely became an uncontrollable instinct by a sort of second nature. In Nov. 1563, during the war with France, eight English merchantmen lying in the harbor of Gibraltar, came into conflict with a heavily armed French privateer, when the Spanish admiral happened round with a strong force from Cadiz. The ships were seized and confiscated by the Spanish, and the captains and men, two hundred and forty in all, were condemned as galley

slaves. Nine months after the capture there were but eighty survivors. The rest had died of cold, hunger, and hard labor. (*Spanish MMS. Rolls House.*)

210. P. 174.

211. To the tune of "Our noble King in his Progress."

212. Seyer's Bristol, Vol. 2, p. 287, and State Papers, Charles I.

213. History of the United Netherlands.

214. Sir John Ogle was appointed Gov. of Utrecht by Prince Maurice, and held office from 1610 to 1618. He was an enthusiastic promoter of the early Virginia settlements, and was buried in Westminster Abbey 17 March 1639-40.

215. Capt. Charles Fairfax, second son of Sir Thomas, fought side by side at Nieuport with John Ogle and Horace Vere (the famous Sir Horatio Vere, Baron of Tilbury, younger brother of Sir Francis), and was killed at the siege of Ostend. He was great uncle of Sir Thomas Fairfax, the famous Parliamentary General, and was brother of Edward Fairfax, the poet, translator of Tasso, and with Spenser founder of the modern school of English poetry. (See Markham's *Lord Fairfax.*) Sir Horatio Vere's daughter Catherine was an aunt of the wife of William Hooke's nephew Sir Humphrey Hooke. His daughter Anne married the above mentioned Lord Fairfax, the Parliamentary General, and another daughter, Mary, married George Villiers, second Duke of Buckingham.

216. Public Record Office.

217. John Bowle was Dean of Salisbury (Sarum) from July 1620 until elected Bishop of Rochester 14 Dec. 1629. His interest in Col. Norton was no doubt prompted by his connection with the family. He was married to Bridget, a sister of Sir George Coppin "of the crown office." Col. Norton's sister was the wife of Thomas Coppin, one of the Colonel's co-patentees in the original draft of the Agamenticus patent.

218. Public Record Office.

219. Captain John Mason was governor of New Foundland, 1615 to 1622. "His employment at home as paymaster of the army in their wars with Spain and France had prevented his visiting his American province (New Hampshire). . . . In 1635 he was made Vice-Admiral of New England, and was preparing to come hither when he fell ill and died, to the great comfort of Massachusetts Bay" (Tuttle's *John Mason*, pp. 178-9).

220. xv, 367.

221. The modern writer upon these topics should be cautioned against obtaining his information too generally at second hand, when he can avoid doing so—at least as regards his more important facts—he should be an *original investigator* as far as possible. If he is to fall into any error, as he occasionally will, let it be in that direction, rather than in copying the mistakes of others. The number of blunders, and bald assumptions he will detect in the work of our early writers, and in not a few modern ones, will surprise him.

222. *Brief Narration*, by Sir F. Gorges.

223. See entry in Mr. Deane's copy of *Records of the Council for New England*.

224. Frothingham's *Charlestown*. Note on p. 27.

225. Mr. Edward Gibbons was Major General of the Mass. Bay forces from 1649 to 1651. "He was the younger brother of the house of an honorable extract, and his ambition exceeding what he could expect at home, he rambled hither." (Savage's *Winthrop*.)

226. As Jane Norton was married at some date prior to March 13, 1638-39, I conclude that she must have been about fourteen years of age at least, when she reached New England in 1633. This would make her only seven years younger than Wm. Hooke. If Eleanor Norton was her mother, the latter must have been born about 1601. This would make Eleanor eleven years older than her second husband. As this might have been, and yet seems somewhat doubtful, and would have made her 39 when her youngest son was born, the probabilities rather favor the conclusion that Jane was a daughter of Col. Norton by a *former wife*. The Colonel must have been at least fifty-five years of age (probably older) when he died (allowing him to have been but twenty-two when at Ostend), and he was certainly old enough to have been married more than once. Sir Ferdinando had been married four times before the death of his friend the Colonel—"an old soldier" (*Public Record Office*) whom he had "long known." (*Brief Narration*.)

227. *Winthrop*, 1, 23.

228. *Mass. Hist. Coll.*, xliii, 323.

229. The old English alphabet contained a character used for the sound of *th*, as in the, that, then, than, etc., which was retained after the introduction of the French alphabetical forms; but when printing was introduced, as the founts, cast for Continental languages, had no such character, the printers adopted the letter *y*, a somewhat similar form, as the best substitute they had. It will thus be seen that *ye* was pronounced *the*. But as *y* in yellow, year, yes, etc., had an entirely different sound, phonetic confusion appears to have been avoided by the eventual substitution of the digraph *th* instead of the letter *y* for the old English letter which in the mean time had been dropped from the alphabet. A good illustration of the use of *y* for *th* is found in the following passage from the Salisbury (Mass.) records: "*Yat* no man shall sell claboards of five feet in length for more *yan yree* shillings p^r hundred, . . . if they cleave by *ye* hundred, *yey* shall not exceed Six pence p^r hundred."

230. Oldham having been killed by the Indians, Captain John Underhill writes: "God stirred up the heart of the honorable Governor, Master (Sir) Henry Vane, and the rest of the worthy Magistrates, to send for a hundred well appointed soldiers under the conduct of Captain John Hendicott, and in company with him had command, Captain John Underhill, Captain Nathan Turner, Captain William Jenningson, besides other inferior officers. I would not have the world wonder at the great number of commanders to so few men, but know that the Indians fight far differs from the Christian practice; for they most commonly divide themselves into small bodies. . . . The Pequeate having slain one Captain Norton, and Captain Stone, with seven more of their company, order was given us to visit them, sailing along the Nahanticot shore with five vessels. The Indians spying of us came running in multitudes along the water side, crying, 'What cheer, Englishmen, What cheer, What do you come for?' They not thinking we intended war. . . . The next morning they sent early aboard an ambassador, a grave senior, a man of good under-

standing, portly carriage, grave and majestic in his expressions. He demanded of us what the end of our coming was. To which we answered that the governors of the Bay sent us to demand the heads of those persons that had slain Captain Norton and Captain Stone, and the rest of their company, and that it was not the custom of the English to suffer murderers to live; and therefore if they desired their own peace and welfare, they would peaceably answer their expectation, and give up the heads of the murderers." Not getting any satisfaction, "we suddenly set upon our march, and gave fire to as many as we could come near, firing their wigwams, spoiling their corn, and many other necessaries, that they had buried in the ground, we raked up, which the soldiers had for booty. Thus we spent the day burning and spoiling the country. Towards night embarked ourselves." (Mass. Hist. Coll., 16, 7-9.)

231. Only fifteen months old in Dec. 1631. Abbott (*Hist. of Maine*) says: "The management of the colony (Agamenticus) was intrusted to his grandson, Ferdinando Gorges, a young(!) man of rank and superior abilities." Why should those who write histories state as a fact what at best is only a surmise?

232. Married to a sister of Col. Norton.

233. Brother of Col. Norton.

234. Brother-in-law, or nephew, of Col. Norton, probably the latter, although the Col. had a brother-in-law of that name.

235. Maine Hist. Coll., 1, 42.

236. Records of the President and Council for New England.

237. The separate grant to young Ferdinando on the west (south) side of the river, is not material to this argument, and is not here considered.

238. There was certainly no power to grant a new patent for land covered by a prior patent except upon cancellation of the latter with the consent of those claiming under it. If this was done, a new patent to the old patentees, or their assigns, would still have been in effect a confirmation of the instrument under which they formerly held, since they would not have accepted any diminished authority or cancellation of their rights, and could not have been compelled to do so except by authority of the crown. Maverick certainly speaks of a "former patent" (perhaps meaning the original patent as it was formerly constituted—with different patentees), but if his expression is to be taken literally, and unless the old patent was cancelled in the manner specified (which is improbable), I think there must have been a misunderstanding on his part, or that he was careless in the use of words. The record of March 22, 1637, after referring to the grant of Dec. 1631, says: "And this day y^e Seal of y^e Company was set thereunto." This sentence may be conclusive of the matter, or not, according to the interpretation put upon it. If the seal was put upon the *renewal*, and that was a *new patent* following a cancellation of the old one, it cannot have been issued by the Council, but must have been in reality a grant from Gorges, who individually at that time probably had as much power to grant in his own territory, as the Council formerly had in its corporate capacity. Perhaps the proviso, at the time of the division in 1635, that any patentee, who was to be undisturbed in his "right with y^e libertyes apper-

taining," by "laying down his *Jura regalia* . . . is now to hold his said Land anew of the proprietor of this division," may be interpreted as providing for the substitution of a grant from Gorges for the one formerly issued by the Council. This however was by no means Mr. Godfrey's understanding of the situation, if we may judge from his petition to the General Court in 1654 (Mass'tts archives), in which he refers to the patent "*from the Counsell of New England for him selfe & partners, the south side to Sir ffrdinando Gorges (sic), & onely the north side to himselfe & divers others his assosiattes.*"

239. If the patent was in the hands of Alderman Hooke, it is possible that at a subsequent time it came into the possession of his grandson William. The latter, in a deed of land (at York) to his son William, says: "Where ye said William Hooke shall take in ye pattent right of which with these presents I have delivered him ye said William Hooke." (See *Essex Deeds*, 28-274.)

240. Maverick says *their deeds*, but he doubtless means their respective *acts* in a single instrument, since further on he says "deede" meaning instrument, or patent, and also says "former patent," and both he and Godfrey in other conveyances use the expression "patent," or "grant & patent," instead of either deed or deeds.

241. Samuel Maverick, says Young (*Young's Chronicles*, 322), "was found here by Gov. Winthrop, on his arrival in June 1630, living at Nottle's Island, now East Boston. How long he had lived there is unknown. As he was not assessed for the campaigne against Morton, in 1628, it is to be presumed that he did not come over till the following year." I think it more probable that Maverick was first at Piscataqua with Mr. David Thompson, who afterwards resided on the island which now bears his name in Boston harbor, and that he was in the country as early as 1623, and at Piscataqua as late as 1628, and paid his assessment at the latter place. In 1628, Piscataqua was assessed £2, 10s for the campaigne, a sum equal to that paid by Plymouth, and yet in 1631 there were but three houses on the river. Edward Johnson, one of Winthrop's companions, says: "On the north side of Charles river they landed near a small island called Noddle's island, where one Samuel Maverick was then living, a man of very loving and courteous behaviour, very ready to entertain strangers, yet an enemy to the reformation at hand, being strong for the lordly prelatial power. On this island he had built a small fort, with the help of one Mr. David Thompson, placing therein four murtherers to protect him from the Indians." Sir Thomas Josselyn, who was here in 1638, says: "July 10, I went ashore upon Noddle's island, to Mr. Samuel Maverick, the only hospitable man in all the country, giving entertainment to all comers gratis"; and Henry Gardner, in his *New England Vindication*, p. 9 (London 1660), speaks of him as "the most hospitable for entertainment of people of all sorts." Winthrop tells us in his *Journal*, under July 1637, that "Mr. Vane (Sir Henry Vane) went over to Nottle's Island to dine with Mr. Maverick, and carried the Lord Ley (afterwards 3d Earl of Marlborough) with him." Young says: "This characteristic hospitality of Mr. Maverick appears to have been at times somewhat troublesom, for at a General Court held Mch.

4, 1635, it was 'ordered that Mr. Samuel Maverick shall, before the last of December next, remove his habitation for himself and his family to Boston, and in the mean time shall not give entertainment to any strangers for longer times than one night, without leave from some assistant; and all this be done under the penalty of £100.' This order however was repealed the following September." Elliot (*Elliot's First Settlers*, p. 310) says: "His name is mentioned by some writers, as one of the west country people who came over to Dorchester; by other accounts he was here before, and he certainly was different from that company in his religious principles and prejudices. His habits of life were also different. Josselyn relates several visits he made to him, and from his account he was a gentleman in very independent circumstances, and lived in a very handsome style. He was member of the Church of England, but was made a freeman before the law was enacted, that every freeman should be a member of a congregational church, but never was chosen into any office. He afterwards complained of the rigid discipline, and oppressive bigotry of the government." According to "The Humble Petition of Mary, the wife of Francis Hooke of the Towne of Kittery in the Provynce of Mayne, Daughter and Heiresse of Samuel Mavericke, deceased," dated Feb. 13, 1687, and addressed: "To His Excelency S^r Edmond Andros, Knight Captⁿ Generall and Govern^r in Chiefe in & over his Majesties Territory and Dominion of New England," it appears that Mr. Maverick, and a few others, had prepared a petition to the King, "in which petition they requested several liberties which they did not then enjoy, and amongst other things for the baptizeing of their children," which fact coming to the knowledge of the Puritan authorities, he was seized, tried, and condemned to pay a fine of £200; and for refusing to pay was imprisoned for some time. The recovery of his property at Noddle's Island was the object of his daughters petition. A disposition to comment upon the intolerance of the Puritans arises not unnaturally at times, but it is well to remember, in the words of Lowell, that "historic toleration must include intolerance among the things to be tolerated." Dr. Dexter well says: "We have too much judged the Puritans, and too much allowed the world to judge them, in the light of our generation, instead of the light of their own; forgetting, and helping others to forget, out of what a horror of thick darkness they were scarcely more than commencing to emerge." Hon. James Savage, LL.D., the historian, referring to Maverick, says: "No man seems better entitled by his deeds to the character of a Christian." (*Savage's Winthrop*—note.) In 1664, he was one of the leaders, selected by the Duke of York, afterwards James II, of the expedition sent from England under command of Col. Richard Nichols, to capture Manhattan (now New York) from the Dutch. After the success of this undertaking he, with Col. Nichols, Sir Robert Carr, and George Cartwright, proceeded to New England under a commission from King Charles, "to hear and determine complaints and appeals, in all causes, as well military as criminal and civil."

242. Probably Sir Ferdinando concluded that little progress towards promoting a settlement was likely to be made by the original patentees, and that people with more capital and enterprise were desirable, if not necessary,

to make the undertaking successful. Probably most of the original patentees were ready to sell out for a reasonable consideration.

243. Mass. Hist. Coll., vi, 94.

244. Rev. Hugh Peters was step-father of the younger Winthrop's wife. He was born in Cornwall in 1598, and was educated at Trinity college, Cambridge; where he took the degree of B.A. in 1616, and M.A. in 1622. About the latter year he was licensed by the Bishop of London to the lectureship at St. Sepulchre's, London. He came to New England in Oct. 1635, and Dec. 21, 1636 became pastor of the church at Salem as successor of Roger Williams. His reputation for shrewd judgment and ready wit was so great with the colony that he was sent to England in 1641 as the best guardian of their interests at home. He became a preacher and colonel in the Parliamentary army, and greatly endeared himself to the army and its leaders whose achievements he described in numerous letters to the House of Commons. He always lent his good offices to the adherents of the vanquished cause, and was desirous that Loud should be banished and not executed. It was through his influence that Juxon was permitted to attend Charles after his condemnation, and his acts of kindness to some of the Royalist clergy are mentioned in Walker's *Sufferings of the Clergy*. After the restoration, he was seized, committed to the Tower of London, and indicted for high treason, as having been concerned in the death of the King. On the 16th of Oct. 1660, he was drawn on a sledge to Charing Cross, and there hanged and quartered, his head being set on a pole on London Bridge. He suffered his cruel death without any sign of wavering. In the executions at Charing Cross, Peters and others were companions in misfortune with Colonel Adrian Scrope, father-in-law of Mary Hooke, a niece of William Hooke, and grandmother of Thomas, 8th Earl of Westmorland, ancestor of the present Earl.

245. John Winthrop, Jr., F.R.S. Gov. of Connecticut, came to New England and settled at Ipswich, Mass., in 1631. He returned to England in 1633, but came back again, and settled at the mouth of the Connecticut river. He was made Governor in 1657, and held the office until his death in 1676. He was an accomplished scholar, and a founder of the Royal Society of London.

246. "Probably written from Salem about the latter part of the year 1637, O. S." Eds. Mass. Hist. Coll.

247. Sallee, a city in the province of Fez, noted at the time for its trade and piracy.

248. Pirate.

249. New Haven.

250. Mr. John Davenport, a distinguished minister of London, and Mr. Theophilus Eaton, an eminent merchant also of London, arrived in Boston in July 1637. They began a settlement in New Haven in April 1638, and the following October Mr. Eaton was chosen Governor, which office he was annually elected to fill until his death in 1657.

251. "William Jeggells y^t came from Virginia deceased 12th May 1674." (Salem records.)

252. In a statute enacted at "A Gen^rall Co^rt, held at Boston, the 7th Day

of the 8th m^o, 1640," providing that after Oct. 31, 1640, conveyances should be recorded, it was stated "that it is not intended that the whole bargain, Sale, &c, shal bee entered, but onely the names of the graunter & grauntee, the thing & the estate graunted, & the date."

253. The Essex entry is fortunately a verbatim copy of the original. Although the deed bears an earlier date than the one in Suffolk it was recorded twenty years later,—the custom of abstracting having in the mean time gone into disuse.

254. The settlers in Massachusetts Bay were Puritans. The early settlements in Maine were promoted by Episcopalians and Royalists in sympathy with hierarchy from which the Puritans had fled.

255. The late Charles W. Tuttle, Esq., of Boston, an able historical writer, and modern investigator, says: "The fame of Sir Ferdinando Gorges belongs to both worlds. England owes to his memory the applause due to a noble spirit thoroughly devoted to her interests and her glory; and New England, the reverence and homage due to the founder of English empire in America. Without the action of this enterprising man at an exigent moment, it is doubtful if England would ever have come peaceably into possession of a single acre of American territory." (Tuttle's *Francis Champfernoon*, pp. 97-8.) I think the above is well and truthfully stated. Another writer describes Sir Ferdinando as "brave, sober, and wise in counsel; a stanch friend and generous enemy, since in his writings *no word of criticism or ill feeling* to those opposed to him can be found." (James P. Baxter, A.M.)

256. Maine Hist. Coll., II, 55.

257. Letter of Vines to Winthrop.

258. H. W. Richardson (Introduction York Deeds, V, 1).

259. Winthrop, 1, 231.

260. Folsom, p. 52. "For that it did not appear to us what authority he had to grant such a commission." *Winthrop*, 1, 231.

261. Strictly speaking Sir Ferdinando Gorges (by Royal commission) was Wm. Hooke's immediate successor in the governorship. Thomas Gorges was the deputy (and resident) governor. Sir Ferdinando states that he intended coming here himself. Doubtless he was detained in England by the breaking out of the civil war in which he took for a time an active part on the royalist side.

262. This may account for a statement said to have been made by one of Gorges' companions, that he found nothing in the way of personal property at the government quarters, but an old iron pot, a pair of tongs, and a couple of andirons. As to a government building at Agamenticus, it is probable that none existed. Possibly some room in Mr. Hooke's house, during his term, was used as government headquarters. If so, it was no doubt furnished with Mr. Hooke's belongings, if furnished at all. The provincial court under William Gorges had certainly held its sessions in a private house—the residence of Captain Bonython at Saco. The personal effects, that might be called government or public property, aside perhaps from arms and ammunition, were probably next to nothing at that period. As the above mentioned tongs and andirons (which may have belonged to

Mr. Hooke) could be less easily renewed than the fire place itself, they were probably treated as permanent fixtures. Why the iron pot remained, unless it was cracked, is beyond my conjectural powers. The statement of Gorges' companion was probably intended to emphasize the paucity of government fixtures, and the need of some outlay in that direction. Both Winthrop and Godfrey, according to the latter's testimony, were aware of "the favorable aspect" that William Hooke's father had cast upon the people of Agamenticus, "and the country in general," even if he had neglected to supply the government quarters with suitable furnishings.

263. Felt's Ecclesiastical History of New England, 1, 445-46. Mr. Felt probably obtained the Godfrey letter from Mr. Winthrop, or Mr. Savage, prior to the publication of the Winthrop papers. As he was preparing his ecclesiastical history, it is evident that he at first thought it referred to the Rev. William Hooke, the minister of the church at Taunton (Mass.), regarding which he desired all possible information. Governor Wm. Hooke, and the Rev. Wm. Hooke, were no doubt related—possibly second cousins. Their seals, as they appear attached to the letters of each among the Winthrop papers, *are the same*—both in the crest and the bearings. The seals were apparently not made by the same engraver, but otherwise are identical. I am not qualified to speak upon the subject of heraldry, but this would seem to show that William of Agamenticus, and William of Taunton, belonged to the same family, in other words had a common ancestor to whom the arms had been granted, or who had borne them before the institution of the college. Their fathers, prior to 1600, were both living in the south of England, at points not far apart—one in Chichester, and the other in the city or county of Southampton. According to the *Encyclopedia Brit.*, as arms became hereditary, their use, ceasing to be confined to the battle-field, "was largely extended to seals and ornaments." The helmet shown on William Hooke's seal appears to be that of an esquire. Armorial bearings probably made their appearance in England about the time of Henry I or II. "The Conqueror and his successors certainly did not use them." "Prior to about 1300 they were by no means an established institution," and there was not, until between the 14th and 15th centuries, "any trace of heraldic *regulations* save what may be deduced from recorded practice. . . . It was not till the reign of Richard III that it was thought necessary to place under specific control the whole heraldry of the kingdom. . . . A considerable number of persons still bear arms derived from an ancestor who bore them *before* the institution of the college; others bear them under grants and patents *from* that body." (See Encl. Brit.) The Rev. William Hooke, born in Southampton, Eng., was son of a gentleman (*Generosi filius*), as expressed in the register of Trinity College, Oxford, where he received his first degree in 1620, and that of A.M. in 1623. He preached at Exmouth in Devonshire, but came to New England in 1639, and settled at Taunton. In 1644 he removed to New Haven, and was associated with Davenport as teacher of the church there. He returned to England in 1656, where he was made domestic chaplain to Cromwell, and master of the Savoy. He died March 21, 1667. His wife was Jane Whalley, sister of the regicide, and grand-daughter of Sir Henry Cromwell. She

was a daughter of Frances Cromwell, a niece of Lady Barrington, and a niece of the mother of John Hampton, the greatest of the English commoners. She was also a niece of Robert, the father of Oliver Cromwell, Protector of England. Thus Mrs. Hooke was Oliver Cromwell's first cousin. She was the niece of Lady Barrington whom Roger Williams wished to marry. (N. E. Hist. & Gen. Reg. XLV, 71, and Mass. Hist. Coll.)

264. Mass. Hist. Coll., 47, 196.

265. This statement would seem to disprove the conclusion of some historical writers that one George Burdett, a minister (formerly of the Massachusetts colony, but more recently of Dover, N. H.), had been installed for a year or more over a congregation at Agamenticus, and that a Rev. Mr. Thomson had preceded him there. Gov. Winthrop, it is true, rather leaves us to infer that such was the case, but he was not on the spot, is not very definite regarding the matter, and at best could only have known from the report of others. There was no church gathered there up to the 28th of January 1639-40, and at that time no prospect of one in the Governor's opinion. But the latter's determination to remove to the Bay colony, principally, or at least ostensibly, on that account, probably startled the townspeople from their indifference, and was the cause of the gathering of a church a few months later. In his anxiety to remove the chief cause of Mr. Hooke's desire to leave the Agamenticus settlement (although it was then too late) it would seem not improbable that Edward Godfrey took an active part, as one of the leading men there, in getting the congregation together, and securing the services of Burdett as its minister, quite likely without taking time for proper inquiry as to his fitness for the position, although he may well have been thought a fit person, and sufficiently qualified for the place in view of the fact that he was, in the words of Mr. Felt (Eccl. Hist. of N. E.), "a good scholar" and "a popular preacher," had been admitted to, and was still a member of the church at Salem, where he had been invited to preach after the departure of Roger Williams, and had previously been chosen lecturer to the church at Yarmouth, England, 1627-1634. If therefore Godfrey, as seems probable, was to any extent responsible for his selection, he very soon after had cause to regret his action, and was no doubt as prompt in acknowledging his mistake, as he was in doing his part towards punishing the minister for his offences. He was one of the four judges or commissioners of the General Court held at Saco on the 25th of June following (1640), before whom Burdett was presented upon two indictments for gross immorality, and by whom he was duly sentenced. This indictment, it will be noticed, was obtained during the administration of Gov. Hooke, and *before the installation of Thomas Gorges*, which is contrary to the impression that has hitherto prevailed. As Burdett soon after fled to England, and could not in any event have been retained in his ministry after his conviction, the period during which he had charge of the congregation at Agamenticus cannot have exceeded three months or four months at the most.

266. Although our forefathers, in the use of "strong waters," were in the main no doubt temperate, according to the standard of the times, and

certainly early provided for putting drunkards in the stocks, it must be admitted that the use of intoxicating liquors was almost universal in the early days, and for more than one hundred and fifty years afterwards. The records are still kept of the equipment of the vessel sent out by the home company in answer to the first appeal by the Mass. Bay settlers for *necessities* in 1629. The ship was provisioned for 150 passengers, and 35 sailors, for three months, each sailor counting as much as two passengers. They provided for the voyage, 45 tuns "beere"; 2 "casks Mallega and Canarie"; 20 gallons "aqua vitae"; and—for drinking, cooking, and all, only 6 tons of water. Higginson, the eminent minister, who came here in 1628, wrote home: "and whereas my stomache could only digest and did require such drinks as was both strong and stale, now I can and doe oftentimes drink New England water verie well." Wood, in his *New England Prospect*, says: "There can be no better water in the world; yet dare I not prefer it to good Beere as some have done." Soon every little New England town had its distillery, and the seaport towns had scores of them. When the little town of Medfield, early in the 18th century, raised the new meeting house, there were required "four barrels of beer, twenty-four gallons West Indian rum, thirty gallons New England rum, thirty-five pounds loaf sugar, twenty-five pounds brown sugar, and four hundred and sixty-five lemons." In 1792 Governor Hancock gave a dinner to the Fusileers at the Merchants' Club in Boston, and for eighty diners there were served 136 bowls of punch, 21 bottles of sherry, and lots of cider and brandy. The clergy were no exception. At the ordination of a clergyman at Beverly, Mass., in 1785, we notice: "30 Bowles Punch before they went to meeting; 80 people eating in morning at 16 d.; 10 bottles of wine before they went to meeting; 68 dinners at 30 d.; 44 bowles punch while at dinner; 18 bottles wine; 8 bowles brandy; Cherry Rum." And 6 people drank tea. (See Prof. Pellow in *Appleton's Popular Science Monthly* for July 1897.)

267. Petition of Sir Ferdinando Gorges to the Privy Council in 1640. His affairs in New England require that he should send over for better settling of his estate and reformation of disorders, and there being many persons *conformable to the orders of this church*, about to go, who, *because of the proclamation for a general restraint, are stayed*, prays for leave to set forth from Bristol, where he dwells, shipping, necessary for himself and private friends wishing to join for the better planting of those parts, belonging to him. *State Papers (Colonial) Vol. X, No. 56.*

268. The poet Pope likens this stream to a street. The houses on the Quay faced it on one side, and those upon St. Augustine's Back faced it on the other. This may be said to be the present arrangement; but Pope saw it very much as it was in Mr. Hooke's day, with its ancient buildings facing the river, and its shipping in the little stream where the tide rose to the height of twenty-five feet, and receding left the vessels high and dry in the mud. An arrangement at present exists which prevents this ebb and flow of the tide in the Frome. Pope came to Bristol in 1732, and in a letter to Mrs. Margaret Blount says: "Over a bridge built on both sides like London bridge, and as much crowded with a strange mixture of seamen, women, children, loaded horses, asses, and sledges with goods, dragging along together without posts to separate them. From thence you come to

a Key along the old wall, with houses on both sides; and in the *middle of the street*, as far as you can see, hundred of ships, their masts as thick as they stand by one another, which is the oddest and most surprising sight imaginable. The street is fuller of them than the Thames from London Bridge to Deptford, and at certain times only the water rises to carry them out; so that at other times a long street, full of ships in the middle, and houses on both sides, looks like a dream." (Gents' Mag., Sept. 1807.)

269. Godfrey writes in 1647 to Gov. Winthrop as follows: "You know the myseryes of this cuntery, for want of trad and comerce, in which each man must studdy & indeauor to further the general good; as when your sonne & Mr. Gellam came to procuer mastes in thes partes, I & Mr. Josselin were not backward either in aduise or action." (*Mass. Hist. Coll.*, 7, 378.)

270. *Mass. Hist. Coll.*, XLVII, 195.

271. "William Blackstone," says Young (*Young's Chronicles*, p. 168), "the first European occupant of the peninsular on which Boston is built, was a clergyman, . . . educated at Emanuel College, Cambridge, where he took the degree of A.B. in 1617, and A.M. in 1621." According to Lechford, who was here in 1637, we may conclude that Blackstone was in Boston as early as 1625 or 1626. "He may have been one of the company whom Robt. Gorges brought over in Sept. 1623, and one of the 'undertakers' to whose charge and custody he left his plantation at Wessagusset, when he returned to England in 1624" (Young). In Charlestown records, under date of July 1630, we find: "In the mean time Mr. Blackstone, dwelling on the other side of the Charles river, alone, at a place by the Indians called Shawmutt, where he only had a cottage, . . . came and acquainted the Governor of an excellent spring there; withal inviting and soliciting him thither. Whereupon . . . the Governor . . . and the greatest part of the church removed thither, . . . and the place was called Boston." Blackstone's residence was at a point of land called Blackstone's Point, afterwards Barton's Point, near Craigie's bridge. Lechford says that Blackstone "went from Boston because he would not join with the church"; and Cotton Mather says, "this was indeed of a particular humour, and he would never join himself to any of our churches, giving the reason for it, 'I come from England because I did not like the lord-bishops; but I can't join with you because I cannot be under the lord-brethren.'" He therefore sold his land in Boston, and with the money purchased a stock of cows, and tramping through the wilderness took up his new residence "in the southern part of the present town of Cumberland, in Rhode Island, about thirty five miles to the southward from Boston, on the eastern bank of the beautiful river that now bears his name. . . . Here Mr. Blackstone lived a retired and quiet life, cultivating his garden and orchard, and studying his books, of which he had 180 Volumes, among them three bibles, and eleven Latin folios and quartos, which he probably brought with him from Emanuel College. These books were all destroyed with his house in King Philip's War, which broke out only a few weeks after his death. . . . The old man died in May 1675, and was buried on his farm on the 28th of the month. . . . His well, with the stoning almost entire, is still to be seen, and also the cellar of his house, and his lonely grave by the side of Study Hill" (Young).

272. *Maine Hist. Coll.*, 1, 45.

273. *Maine Hist. Coll.*, 2, 58.

274. "I Sir Ferdnando de Georges Lord Proprietor and owner of the province of Maine in New England in America, . . . of the especiall good opinion which I have conceaved of my trusty and welbeloued Sir Thomas Joffelyn knight Richard Vynes Esquire my Steward generall Francis Champernon Esquire my loving Nephew Henry Joffelyn and Richard Bonithton Esquires William Hooke and Edward Godfree gentlemen, . . . doe hereby constitute ordaine and appoint them the said Thomas Joffelyn knight . . . and the rest of the persons above named . . . to be my Councelors for the due execu^on of Justice in such manner and forme as by my ordinances hervnto subscribed is directed . . . And I doe further ordeyne that my said Counfellors or any three of them whereof the said Sir Thomas Jofelin or Richard Vines Esquire to be one shall heare determine and order all complaintes . . . And I doe further ordeyne that you shall appoint some sufficient Clarke to register all your proceedings and record all your orders of Court and to assigne such other officeres to attend you said Courte as shall be fitt. And I doe further ordeyne that if any person or persons shall conteme or refuse to give obedience vnto such order or orderes which you shall make of any of your said meetinges or sessions and being duly convicted thereof that then you assigne your prouost martiall to goe with a sufficient garde and to apprehend such a delinquent and him to keep in safe prison till his cause be further ordered and in case resistance be made that then the prouost Martiall proceed to kill or otherwise apprehend and take such resistors as in case of rebellion or mutiny you giving him warrant vnder your hands and seales for soe doing." Etc., etc. (*Hazzard's Coll.*, 1, 458.)

275. *Maine Hist. Coll.*, 1, 46.

276. *Hist. of Wells and Kennebunk*, by Edward E. Bourne, LL.D.

277. *Hist. of the Law, the Courts and the Lawyers of Maine*, by Wm. Willis, Esq.

278. *Folsom*, p. 54.

279. *Palfrey*, 1, 221.

280. Thomas Gorges was eldest son of Henry Gorges of Battcombe Manor near Cheddar, Somersetshire; born about 1613. He was son-in-law of Sir Jerome Alexander (Tuttle). Winthrop speaks of him as "a young gentlemen of the Inns of Court."

281. The Lord Proprietary in granting a city charter to Agamenticus authorized "it, and its suburbs, consisting of a territory of twenty-one square miles, to be governed under the name of Gorgeana, by a Mayor, twelve Aldermen, a Common Council of twenty-five members, and a Recorder, all to be annually chosen by the citizens. The forms of procedure in the Recorder's Court were to be copied from those of the British Chancery. . . It was ordained by the Charter that Wednesday of every week should be market day, and that there should be two fairs held every year, viz., upon the feast days of St. James and St. Paul." (*Palfrey*, 1, 221, and *Maine Hist. Coll.*, 2, 59.)

282. Lunnell's *Port Improvement Question*.

283. Taylor's *Book about Bristol*.

284. Lunnell.

285. Essex Deeds (Salem) 1, part 1, 138-140 (195-198).

286. A description of New England (M.S.S.) believed to have been written by Samuel Maverick, Esq. (about 1660, says Mr. Chas. Deane) was recently discovered in the British Museum. In it appears the following: "Bristoll now Yorke.—About 12 miles further is the River Agomentine, for which and the lands adjacent, a Patent was (nere 30 yeares since) granted unto Sir Ferdinando Gorges, Mr. Godfrey, Alderman Hooke of Bristol, myself, and some others. On the northside of this River, At our great Cost and Charges, wee settled many ffamilies, which was then called Bristoll, and according to the Patent the Government was conformable to that of the Corporation of Bristoll, only admitting of Appeals to the General Court of the Province of Mayne, which was often kept there, but some yeares since the Government with the rest was Swallowed up by the Massachusetts." A statement of this kind from Maverick, or any other reputable *resident here*, we should expect to find reliable, as in this instance (the name Bristol was at first proposed for the new city, but Georgeana was finally decided upon); but a knowledge of the geography of the colonies among the writers of the day *in England* was none too good, and doubtless their information upon other colonial matters should not be too implicitly relied upon. In a large folio work of nearly 700 pages upon America, printed in 1672, and embellished by a great number of full page steel engravings, and finely executed maps—a volume now in my library—I find the following among the New England references: After mentioning "Matapan, or Dorchester, a Frontier Town," the writer speaks of "Boston, anciently Accomenticus(!), the Center and Metropolis of the rest." This would seem to indicate the importance that Agamenticus at one time possessed in the mind of the average educated Englishman, probably more from what was expected of the place, than from what had been actually accomplished there.

287. The same condition of things was true of New Hampshire, which was in the grant to Mason, and which had to succumb earlier than Maine. For instance, in 1642 Winthrop writes of Richard Gibson, the incumbent at Strawberry Bank (Portsmouth): "He being wholly addicted to the hierachy and discipline of England, did exercise a ministerial function in the same way, and did marry and baptize at the Isle of Sholes, which was now found to be *within our jurisdiction*." (11, p. 79.) The Court charged him with denying *their title* (to the N. H. province), and summoned him to Boston, but concluded not to punish him, in view of his "*submission*," and the fact of his "being a stranger and about to depart the country."(!)

288. £436. As money was then about five times its present value, this sum would represent at the present time about \$11,000 of our money. This loan was probably made to Mr. Dexter to enable him to develop his iron mine in Lynn, and to establish a forge, in which undertaking he was associated with Mr. Robert Bridges. The latter, it is said, went to London where he formed a company which advanced £1000 for the enterprise. The iron foundry erected on the western bank of the Saugus river, where large heaps of slag are still to be seen, was the first ever established in America. A fine specimen of iron ore from the site of this foundry, showing the

charcoal with which the annealing was done, may be seen among the curiosities at the Old South Church in Boston.

289. Vol. 112, p. 12.

290. Major Francis Hooke of Kittery was not a brother of William Hooke, as stated by Savage, although he may have been a cousin—perhaps a son of William's uncle, Edward Hooke of Bristol. Both Francis and Edward were apparently educated to the law. Francis appears to have been a much younger man than William Hooke, probably about the age of William Hooke's son—Francis and William Hooke, the younger, were both married the same year. Francis was married in Boston Sept. 20, 1660, by Major Humphrey Atherton, to Mary, widow of John Palsgrave of Charlestown, and daughter of Samuel Maverick, Esq., of Noddles Island. Judge Williamson (*Hist. of Maine*, 1, 679) gives the following in regard to him: "Inflexibly attached as he was to the interests of Gorges . . . he seems to have had the singular good fortune of very few public men, that is, to be popular with all parties. For in 1692 and 1693, he was a member of the province-council under the Charter of William and Mary, a judge of probate two years, and also a judge upon the bench of common pleas. He removed to Kittery (from Winter Harbor) before the commencement of the 2d Indian war, where he died (without issue) in January 1695. In a word, such was Francis Hooke, that no other of that age in the province was so public spirited and highly useful, none better beloved." In the "Diary of Samuel Sewall" (*Harvard Coll.*, 1671), we find: "5th day Jan. 10, 1694-95, Major Hook dies, being much wanted and lamented. Had a letter from him Dec. 31. It seems was taken but that day S^enⁱght before he died. The Lord save New England." In view of his residence in the eastern colony, and his attachment to the cause of Gorges, it is quite possible that Francis Hooke came to this country originally in the interest of Alderman Hooke (whose outlay in promoting the Agamenticus settlement had been very great, and whose interests there may have required some personal oversight), in which case some relationship between the two would seem probable. The Alderman's sons were all then deceased, and his grandson William barely of age. If Francis Hooke was here in 1658, as seems possible, he was not improbably sent hither by the Alderman before his death which occurred that year. If he came later (say 1659-60) he may have been sent by the Alderman's widow and executrix.

291. 154 Rods, Poles or Purches. " $\frac{1}{2}$ a mile wanting 6 poles" = "154 m." 1 mile = 320 rods, poles or purches. $\frac{1}{2}$ mile wanting 6 poles = 154 rods, poles, etc. Therefore 154 m. = 154 rods, poles, or purches. $6\frac{1}{4}$ miles long = 2000 rods which divided into 13 parts = 154 rods each. It would seem then that each part was 154 rods of $\frac{1}{2}$ a mile less 6 rods long x 3 miles wide (!) or a total of 147,840 square rods which is $\frac{1}{13}$ of 1,920,000 square rods, the equivalent of 12,000.

292. Robert Thomson, says Savage, was "a man of distinction in London, where he married, I conjecture, a sister of Gov. Hopkins of Conn., was a transient resident here in 1639. Bought the old church edifice and ground on which it stood on State street for £160 in 1639." (Brazier building no. 27 State street stands on a portion of these premises, and on the site of the

old church.) "But he was a powerful friend of Mass. and for services our Ct. made grant to him of 500 acres. See Hutchinson coll. for some letters from him which show good disposition and judgment." See note Winthrop 1, 318.

293. Of Henry, son of Sir Thomas Josselyn, Morton, in his *New England Canaan*, says: "A more complete discovery of these parts (Lake Champlain) is (to my knowledge) undertaken by Henry Joseline, Esquire, son of Sir Thomas Joseline of Kent, knight." He "resided many years at Black Point, and was highly respected as a magistrate. He succeeded Mr. Vines as governor of the province in 1645." (Maine Hist. Coll. 2, 78, 79.) He arrived at Piscataqua July 8, 1634 in the ship *Pied-Cow* as agent for Capt. John Mason, the patentee. His father, Sir Thomas, came subsequently and returned to England in 1639-40.

294. Mr. Tuttle (the late Charles W. Tuttle, Esq., of the Suffolk Bar) says of Champernoon: "He was descended from the royal house of the Plantagenets, and from noble houses of England and France. His great-grandfather was the renowned Count of Montgomery, who had the misfortune to slay Henry II, King of France, while breaking a lance with him at a grand tournament in Paris; he was afterwards distinguished as a leader in the cause of the Huguenots, and associated with the Prince of Condé and the Admiral Coligny. Raleigh, Gilbert, and Gorges were the kindred of Captain Champernowne." He was born in 1614, and was therefore two years younger than Mr. William Hooke, and but twenty-five years of age at the time of his appointment as councillor in 1639.

295. Probably a son of the "Mr. Fitzherbert, a merchant of Bristol," who, when that city was captured by the Royalists in 1643, made to Prince Rupert "an overture of divers ships in Kingsroad (the harbour of Bristol)" to form a fleet "for his Majesty's service" (Warburton).

296. Salisbury was then included in the old County of Norfolk.

297. A certain James Dyer was Town Clerk of Bristol in 1638.

298. To show how some investigators exercise their invention in supplying names for vacant spaces, it may be stated that Florence Hooke in Coffin's Newbury (among other inaccuracies there) is given as daughter of Horace Hooke. The latter is an absolutely mythical personage so far as New England is concerned.

299. This Elizabeth, daughter of William² Hooke and Elizabeth Dyer, afterwards married Ezekiel² Cravath of Boston. Hon. William C. Whitney, Secretary of the Navy under President Cleveland, and Mr. Paul D. Cravath of New York, are descended from Ezekiel² Cravath and Elizabeth Hooke. Ezekiel² Cravath was son of Ezekiel¹ by wife Mary, daughter of Wm. Clutterbuck (name of a prominent Bristol and Gloucestershire family) by wife Elizabeth.—Will of said Elizabeth (Clutterbuck) Cravath in Suffolk probate (Boston) in 1709. Wm. Clutterbuck was probably of Charlestown at time of decease, but the records there of that period are gone.

300. In Massachusetts Archives, 127, 65, is a power of attorney from Wm. Glanville of Boston to Edward Randolph, Esq., of the same place "to ask, demand, & receive of Wm. Hooke of Kittery in the province of

Newhampsh^r (sic) all Such Sume or Sumes of money as is due to the S^d Willm Glanvile" etc., dated "one & thirtyeth day of August 1687."

301. I have not been able to learn the maiden name and parentage of Mary, widow of Robert^s Pike. Savage says the latter married Martha Goldwyer, perhaps daughter of George Goldwyer of Dover (formerly of Salisbury). But George Goldwyer, who married Martha² Moyce (Joseph¹), died April 12, 1684, without issue. It was not his daughter but his *widow* who married Robert Pike in Salisbury Oct. 30, 1684, and it was Major Robert² Pike (then a widower) whom she married, and not his son Robert.

302. Maj. Francis Hooke would appear to have been nearer the age of William² Hooke. They were both married the same year (1660), whereas William¹ Hooke was married some twenty-five years earlier.

303. See York County Court Records, VI, 236.

304. York County Court Records, 1717, VI, 219.

305. Mr. Maverick's land was the property of Mrs. (Major) Francis Hooke, daughter and sole heir of Samuel Maverick. Deeds to daughters Elizabeth and Eleanor seem not to have been made a matter of record.

306. Diary of Samuel Sewall (Harvard Col., 1671).

WILLS

WILLS

WILL OF ALDERMAN HUMPHREY HOOKE

IN THE NAME OF GOD AMEN—I, Humphrey Hooke, the elder of the City of Bristol, Marchant, being this present 25th day of June 1658 in perfect memory and indifferent good health, which with all thankfullness I most humbly acknowledge to bee the mercie of my good God who hath of his great goodness preserved me to the age of near 78 years and made me able at this great age to make and write this my last will and testament; And so I doe ordain and appoint it to bee—And doe revoake all former wills by me made: And first I committ my soule to my mercifull God with assured hope of pardon for all my Sinns through the medium and by the merritts of my blessed Savior Jesus Christ who did shed his precious blood for me; And my fraile body to the earth for the Temporal estate which God in his mercie hath given mee I depose thereof in manner following: Imprimis I do give and bequeath to the poor in St. Stephens Parish in Bristoll tenn pounds and to the Almsmen in the Marchants Almshouse in the Marsh of Bristoll tenn pounds; And to the poore in the Manore of Kingesweston tenn pounds; And to the poore of that parish in the east streete of Chichester were I was borne tenn pounds all currant monies. (2) I do give and bequeath the Ministers of Gods word in Bristoll and to Mr. Towgood, Mr. Stanfaste, Mr. Williamson, Mr. Bruerton and Mr. Freeman three pounds apeice currant moneys. (3) I do give and bequeath to my loving daughter Elizabeth Creswicke the summe of twelve hundred pounds, and to my loving daughter Sarah Hellier the summe of tenn hundred pounds both to be paid in currant moneys within eighteen months after my decease and they to order and dispose thereof for their and their children's benefit as they please without giving accont to anie for the same: But if either of their husbands or both be indebted or doe owe unto me anie summe or summes of money at my decease they shall pay it to my said daughters their wives in parte of their said legacies the rest shall be paid to my executrix at the time before mentioned. (4) I doe give and bequeath unto my grandsonne Humphrey Hooke the summe of three hundred pounds and to his sonne Thomas one hundred pounds both to be paid in currant moneys within one year after my decease And I give tenn pounds to his wife as a token of my love. (5) I do give and bequeath to my granddaughter Dorothy Aldworth the summe of fifty pounds currant moneys to be paid six months after my decease. (7) I doe give and bequeath to my grandsonne Thomas Hooke the summe of two hundred pounds currant moneys to be paid in three years after my decease. (8) I doe give and bequeath to my grandchildren William and Josias Hooke forty pounds apeice a couple of most stubborn and unrulie boys, And I give to their brother Jacob Hooke one hundred pounds in hope he may prove better, this one hundred pounds to be paid fouer yeares after my decease. (9) I doe give and bequeath to my grandchildren Mary and Cicily Elbridge the summe of one hundred and fifty pounds apeice, And to Sarah and Giles Elbridge one hundred pounds apeice to be paid in three yeares after my

decease but my will is that the said Giles relinquish his interest in the City seal else this one hundred pounds I have given him shall be paid to the said three sisters. (10) I doe give and bequeath to my grandsonne William Cann (sic) (probably should be Collins) the summe of fifty pounds currant moneys to be paid him two years after my decease. (11) I doe give and bequeath to my brother Edward Hooke the summe of one hundred pounds currant moneys to be paid him quarterly that is five and twenty pounds quarterly after my decease. (12) I doe give and bequeath to my sister in law Mrs. Alice Gostlett the summe of one hundred pounds currant moneys to be paid to her own hands six months after my decease. (13) I give to Mary Stanlake and Anne Stanlake and Elizabeth Bickley four pounds apeice, And to Bruene Bickley the money he oweth me which is about eighteen pounds. (14) I doe give my sonne Creswicke, my sonne Collins, my sonne Hellier, my sonne Southwood, my sonne Jackson, my grandsonnes Robert Aldworth, Humphrey and Thomas Hooke and their sister Mary Hooke twelve pounds apeice which I desire them accept for mourninge. (15) I doe give to Mr. Henry Jones, Minister of St. Stephens in Bristoll five pounds for my funeral dues And to his Clarks forty shillings And to his Sexton twenty shillings. (16) I doe give unto the servants that shall be dwelling with me at my decease three pounds apeice, And to the Baylyffes of my Mannours forty shillings apeice. (17) I doe declare that all my houses, store houses and lands and Tenements in the City of Bristoll except two Tenements in Broad Street and one Tenement in grape lane are settled by conveyances and so is that Capitall Messuage and little Mannour of Kingesweston also Weston St. Lawrence in the Parish of Henbury in the County of Glouchester which I bought from Mr. Toby Edmonds to hold to myself for life to my wife for life and the remainder to the heirs of my sonne Thomas Hooke, And my will is that it should be soe (sic). Also that my Tenement in Lawrence Weston in the tenure of Richard Wookey is settled by conveyance to myself for life to my wife for life and the remainder to the heirs of my son Thomas Hooke by Mrs. Jackson and my will is it should be soe (sic). (18) I doe devise and give and grant to my said wife All that my *Mannoe* of Livingston in the said county of Glouchester with all its rights, members and appurtenances and all rents, profitts and commodities issueing therefoare accordinge to the customs of that Mannour and all that farme or Tenement with the appurtenances called Aytens now in the Tenure of John Hollen, And all that farme or Tenement with the appurtenances called Hardings, now in the Tenure of William Hurne and others, All which I bought of Sir John Wynter Kt., And also all those grounds which I lately bought of Mr. Walker, to hold the said Mannour two frames and grounds with their appurtenances to my said wife and her assigns the full time and terme of her natural life: The remainder I do give and devise and grant to my grandsonne Humphrey Hooke and to the heirs male of his body lawfully to be begotten: And for want of such heirs the remainder I do give devise and graunt to the heirs male of mee Humphrey Hooke forever. (19) I doe give devise and grant to my said wife All that my Mannour of Frampton upon Seavorne in the said county of Glouchester with all its rights, members and appurtenances which are not otherwise by me disposed of. And all that

farm in the said Mannour with all its appurtenances now in the tenure of Thomas Ager and all other my lands and Tenements in the said *Mannoe* and parish of Frampton upon Seavorne not disposed of, To hold the said Mannour farms and premises to my said wife and her assigns the full time and terms of her natural life. The remainder I doe give, devise and grant to my said Grandsonne Thomas Hooke sonne of Mrs. Jackson and to the heirs males of his body lawfully to be begotten. And for want of such heirs the remainder I doe give, devise and grant to my grandsonne Humphry Hooke and to the heirs male of his body lawfully to be begotten; And for want of such heirs the remainder I doe give devise and grant to the Right heirs of mee Humphry Hooke forever they and every of them paying the Lord Berkeleys rent and other dues. (20) I doe give and devise and grant to my said grandsonne Humphry Hooke All those my Mannours of Elverton also Elberton and that my Mannours of Norwick, and Redwick and all that my three quarter parts of the Mannour of Frampton Cotteroll with all their rights, members and appurtenances, All which are lying and being in the said County of Glouchester, And alsoe all that my Mannour of Midsomer Norton in the County of Somersett with all the rights, members and appurtenances To hold the said Mannours of Elverton, Norwick and Redwick the three quarter parts of Frampton Cotteroll and Midsomer Norton with all their rights, members and appurtenances to my said Grandsonne Humphry Hooke and to the heirs male of his body lawfully to be begotten and for want of such heirs the remainder I doe give, devise and grant to the right heirs of mee Humphry Hooke forever. (21) I doe give, devise and grant to my said wife All those my two Tenements in Broad Street in Bristoll called the Lambe which I hold by Lease of the Companie of Taylors in Bristoll and all that ground in Norwick aforesaid being part of Butchers Lease and containes about six acres which I hold of Mr. Sadler for life. To hold said two Tenements and the said six acres of ground to my said wife and her assigns the full time and terme of her natural life if the said Leases expire not before, The remainder of these Leases if anie be I give to my said grandsonne Humphry Hooke. (22) I doe give, devise and grant to my said wife All that my Tenement in Grapelane in Bristoll in the tenure of widow Badman And all that my farme or Tenement in Norwick in the tenure of Robert Mansell And all that my Tenement in Redwick in the tenure of the said Mansell and all that my fouer acres of ground in the aforesaid Butchers Lease with all their appurtenances to hold to my said wife and her assigns the said Tenement in Grapelane the farme in Norwick the Tenement in Redwick and the fouer acres in Butchers Lease the full time and terme of her natural life, The remainder I doe give, devise and grant to my said grandsonne Humphrey Hooke and to his heirs forever. (23) I doe make, ordaine, confirme and approve my said deare and loving wife to be my full and sole executrix of this my last will and testament And I doe give unto my said wife, my executrix, all my goods, chattles, moneys, plate, Jewells, rings, debts, mortgages, adventures at Sea and beyond the seas and all other personall estate whatsoever not herein given my said Executrix paying my debts and legacies given by this my will in manner and forme herein contained. (24) And having by Gods assistance thus settled and

disposed of that estate which the Lord was pleased to lend me I doe declare my will and meaning to be all those to whom I have given land or legacie shall give ample discharges in the lawe (not only in full of that given them but alsoe in full of all other demands before they enjoy the said lands or legacies) unto my said Executrix And I desire and appoint my loveinge Sonnes Henrie Creswick and George Hellier and my dutiful grandsonnes Humphry and Thomas Hooke to be the overseers of this my last will and Testament and I doe desire them by all the bonds of love and affection that is between us that they fayle not to be ayding and assisting to my said Executrix in all things needful whom I am assured they shall find ready and willing not only to performe this my will but hope will be able and very willing to doe more for those branches which God hath spared us. And in remembrance of my love for my said overseers I give them ten pounds apeice forrings (Signed Humphry Hooke in margin). (25) I doe now give and bequeath more unto my grandsonnes William and Josias Hooke Threescore pounds apeice current moneys to be paid them with the other forty pounds apeice within six months after my decease; this I doe in hope of their amendment. I doe give and bequeath to Cicely Tily also Bindon ten pounds current moneys (Signed Humphry Hooke in margin of will). (26) I doe devise and grant unto William Hooke my grandsonne all that my Tenement in the Mannour of Kingsweston in the Tenure of Katherine Stokes widowe and all that my ground called CO^{et} orchard in the tenure of the said Katherine with all their appurtenances (except that acre which is laid to the little house) To hold to the said William Hooke and his assigns for the full time and terme of his natural life next and immediately after the death, forfeiture or Surrender of the said Katherine her paying the accustomed old rents. (27) I doe devise and grant to Josias Hooke my grandsonne All that my Tenement in Kingsweston aforesaid in the tenure of John Steepens and also all that my Tenement in Kingsweston aforesaid in the tenure of Jane Hill widowe with all their appurtenances To hold to the said Josias Hooke and his assigns for the full time and terme of his natural life next and immediately after the death forfeiture or surrender of the said John for his Tenement and of the said Jane for her Tenement her payinge the accustomed old rents. (28) Whereas there is owing to me by the Chamber of Bristoll upon two of the Citties Seales about five hundred and fifty pound allowinge lesse *then* (sic) ordinary interest and defaulting the rent I owe them besides one hundred pound I lent the County of Somersett by their order as by their note, and about thirty pounds owing mee upon the Chamberlaines Seals all which I doe give to the Major Aldermen and counsell of the Citty, provided they do pay to the overseers of the poore of St. Stephens parish in the s'd Citty every weeke fouer shillings for bread to be given to the poore of that Parish And now it is by my order this beinge for a continuance thereof And that they alsoe pay to the said overseers fouer shillings a week for coales to be bought and given weekly to the poore of that parish forever; And for what remaineth I give to the Hospital of Queen Elizabeth if this be accepted I desire they give my Executrix a release of rents to the time of my decease the same being allowed in the accoupt; And it is alsoe desired it may be Registered as my

gifts and a Cobby thereof given to my Executrix upon which she shall deliver up those Seales and other papers. (29) I did in the sixth article of my will provide for my granddaughter Mary Hooke but not findinge it to my minde have crost it out And doe now give and bequeath unto my said granddaughter the summe of fouer hundred pounds curr't moneys to be paid her in two years after my decease or at her day of marriage. (30) I doe devise and grant to Jacob Hooke my grandsonne All that my Tenement in the Mannour of Elverton in the Tenure of widowe Freeman with all the appurtenances, To hold to the said Jacob and his assignes the full time and terme of his naturall life next and immediately after the death, forfeiture or surrender of the said widdowe Trueman. This my will being so much enlarged beyond my expectation as may appeare by my sealings and firmings it on the other side I doe now againe declare it to be my last will and Testament this seaventeenth November 1658 In the presence of these underwritten, Hump Hooke (sic); Mary Elbridge, Cicely Elbridge; Samuel Child, William Edmonds, Humphrey Hooke Junior.

THIS WILL was proved at London the (sic) twentieth day of the month of April in the yeare of our Lord God one Thousand six hundred fifty and nine; Before the Judges for probate of wills and grantings Administrations lawfully authorized. By the oath of Cicely Hooke the Relict of the said deceased and sole Executrix named in the said will To whom was committed administration of all and Singular the goods and Chattles and Debts of the said deceased shoothe said Cicely Hooke being first sworn in due forms of lawe by vertue of a Commission well and truly to administer the same.

WILL OF CICILY HOOKE WIFE OF ALDERMAN
HUMPHREY HOOKE

IN THE NAME OF GOD AMEN, I Cicily Hooke of the City of Bristoll, widdow being sick and weak in body but of good and perfect memory (Thanks be to God) doe make this my last Will and Testament in forme followinge IMPRIMIS I doe constitute and ordaine my nephew sic Humphrey Hooke esq. to be full and sole Executor of this my last Will and Testament I desire to be buried in the parrish Church of St. Stephens in Bristoll as near my late deceased husband Humphrey Hooke, Esquire, deceased as with convenience I may. I give to my daughter Creswick the summe of sixteen hundred pounds, to her daughters Anne Creswick fower hundred pounds, to her daughter Elizabeth Creswick the summe of two hundred pounds, to her daughter Hestor Creswick the summe of two hundred pounds, to her daughter Florence Creswick the summe of two hundred pounds, to her sonne Francis Creswick the summe of two hundred pounds And to her sonne Humphrey Creswick the summe of two hundred pounds ITEM I give to my Daughter Hellier the summe of sixteen hundred pounds to her sonne Thomas Richardson the summe of two hundred pounds, to her sonne Humphrey Hellier the summe of two hundred pounds, and to her daughter Sarah Hellier the summe of two hundred pounds ITEM I give to my Grandchild Mary Peterson

the summe of one hundred pounds, to my grandchild Cicily Wasborow the summe of two hundred pounds, to my grandchild Sarah Elbridge the summe of two hundred pounds and to my grandchild William Hooke the summe of two hundred pounds Item I give to my grandchild Mary Hooke five hundred pounds, to my grandchild Thomas Hooke the summe of one hundred pounds, and to Mary Aldworth daughter of my Grandchild Dorothy Aldworth the summe of fiftie pounds Item I give to my grandchild William Cann the summe of one hundred pounds, to Florence Hooke daughter of my Grandsonne Humphrey Hooke to hundred pounds, to Elizabeth Hooke the other of his daughters two hundred pounds ITEM I give to my brother-in-law Mr. Edward Hooke the summe of one hundred pounds, to my sister Mrs. Alice Gostlett the summe of one hundred pounds. And my will is that my Executors do so settle the same in trust for her, that her husband may not have any power thereof ITEM I give to my sister-in-law Mary Dixon the summe of ten pounds, to my servant Alice Williams the summe of ten pounds, to my Kinswoman Cicily Tiley the summe of ten pounds ITEM I give to the poor people of the Tithings of Kingsweston the summe of five pounds, And to Mr. Brereton Minister of Henbury the summe of five pounds ITEM I give to the poor people of the parrish of St. Stephens the summe of five pounds and to Mr. Henry Jones minister thereof the summe of five pounds, which money soe by me given to the poor of the said especial parrishes I will shall be given to such of them as my Executor shall think meet. And further I will that all other legacies by me hereinbefore given and bequeathed bee paid within one year next after my deceas. I give all my Jewells, Plate and Lynnon to my two Daughters Elizabeth Creswick and Sarah Hellier equallie to be divided between them at the discretion of my said executor within one month near after my decease. All and each of my goods chattelle, chattells and other estate whatsoever not herein before by mee given or bequeathed my debts and legacyes being paid and funerall expenses discharged I give and bequeath to my said Grandsonne Humphrey Hooke whom I make and ordaine my sole executor as aforesaid this one and thirtieth day of August in the year of our Lord one thousand six hundred and sixty, More I give to my Grandsonne Thomas Richardson the summe of two hundred pounds.

Cicily Hooke signes

seales and publishes in the presence of John Haggatt, Hen. Wasborow,
Alice Wm. Williams

WILL OF SIR THOMAS HOOKE, GRANDSON OF SIR
HUMPHREY HOOKE, OF BRISTOL, 1580-1659

In the name of God Amen: I Thomas Hooke of Lincolns Inn in the county of Middlesex Baron Doe make and ordaine this my last will and testament in manner and forme following (That is to say) I give unto Dame Elizabeth Hooke my dear wife the sum of two hundred pounds to be paid her within one month after my decease And alsoe All the and

Rings she doth usually wear And my coach and coach horses and such Two of my Saddle Naggs as she shall choose which I shall have att the time of my decease And as for my household stuff, Plate and Lynnon which att the time of my death shall be in my house called Tangier Park in the County of Southampton I give the occupation and use thereof unto my said wife for an during the time only that she shall be and confirmed from and after my death a widdow and unmarried And from and after her decease or when she shall first after my death marry which of them shall first happen then my will is that the said household stuff, plate and Lynnon and from and after my own decease. All other my Personal Estate whatsoever which I now have or shall have and I now in Law or equity shall be employed by my et for the discharging and satisfying of the debts if any by me owing or to be owing and the Legacies and gifts herein by me given and made. And as for and concerning all my lands, tenements and hereditaments I give and devise the same in manner following (that is to say) I give all my lands, tenements and hereditaments lying and being in the counties of Norfolk, Warwick, Derby, Gloucester, Somerset and Monmouth, or any of them, to my sonn Hele Hook for any during the term of his natural life without impeachment of waste And from and after his decease or other sooner determination of his the said Hele Hooke's estate then I devise the same unto Sir William Thomson and Robert Thomson hereinafter named and their heirs during the life of the said Hele Hook upon Trust to support and preserve the contingent estates herein after lymitted from being destroyed And to that and to bring action and to mak entries as the case shall require yet nevertheless to permit the said Hele Hooke during his life to hold the Rents, issues and proffitts of the before devised premises to his own use And from and after the decease of the said Hele Hooke then I give the same to the first sonne of the body of the said Hele Hooke to be begotten And to the heirs male of the body of such first sonne issueing And for default of such issue then I give the same to the second third and all and every other the son and sonnes of the body of the said Hele Hooke lawfully to be begotten severally successively and respectively in remainder and after another in order and course as they and every of them shall be in priority of birth and seniority of age And to the several and respective heirs male of their bodies issueing the older of such sonnes and the younger of such sonnes and the heirs male of their bodys issueing And for default of such issue any wife the said Hele Hooke shall hereafter marry shall happen to be enjoint of a child or children by him at the time of my decease then I give the same before devised premises unto the said Sir William Thomson and Robert Thomson and their heirs until such wife of the said Hele Hooke so enjoint as aforesaid shall be delivered of such child or children or dye which shall first happen in trust for such child or children if the same be a son or son's children such son or sonns then in trust for such person or persons as shall be next in or remainder of the premises And if such afterborn child or children be a sonn or sonns then I give the same premises to such afterborn sonn and sonns respectively and successively as they shall be in priority of age and birth And to the several and respective heirs males of the Bodeys of such afterborn sonn and sonns

lawfully to be begotten The elder of the said afterborn sonns and the heirs male of his body being always to be preferred before the younger of them and the heirs male of his or their bodeys And for default of such issue then in case my said now wife shall happen to be enjoint of a child or children at the time of my decease Then again the same premises unto my said wife untill she shall be delivered of such child or children or shall dye which shall first happen in Trust for such child or children if the same be a sonn or sonns And if no such sonn or sonne then in Trust for such person or persons as shall be next in reversion or remainder of the premises And if such afterborn child or children shall be a sonn or sonns then again the same premises to such afterborn sonn and sonns respectively and successively as they shall be in priority of Age or Birth and to the several and respective heirs males of the bodys of such afterborn sonn and sonns The elder of the same afterborn sonns and their heirs male of his body always being preferred before the younger of them and the heirs male of his or their bodys And for default of such issue Then for and concerning my said lands, tenaments and hereditaments lying and being in the said County of Warwick, Derby, Gloucester, Norfolk, Somersett and Monmouth I give the same unto my three daughters, Elizabeth, Mary and Ann respectively for and during the terme of their respective natural lives equally to be divided between them share and share like and in common and not jointly And from and after the decease of my said daughter Elizabeth or other sooner determination of her said estate then I give her said share of and in the herein before devised premises unto the said Sr William Thomson and Robert Thomson and their heirs during the life of the said Elizabeth my daughter in Trust to preserve the contingent estates herein after thereof lymited from being destroyed Yet, nevertheless to permit the said Elizabeth, my daughter to take the rents and profits thereof during her life to her own use. And from and after the decease of my said daughter Elizabeth I devise her said share unto the first, second, third and all and every other the sonn and sonns of the body of the said Elizabeth my daughter lawfully to be begotten severally, successively and respectively in remainder one after another in order and course as they and every of them shall be in priority of birth and age And to the several and respective heirs male of their bodyes issueing the elder of such sonns And the heirs male of his body issueing being always preferred before the younger of such sonns and the heirs male of their bodyes issueing And for default of such issue then I give my said daughter Elizabeth her said share unto all and every the daughter and daughters of the bodey of my said daughter Elizabeth to be begotten equally to be divided betwixt them and in common And to the respective heirs of the bodyes of my said daughter Elizabeth's daughter to be begotten And from and after the Respective decease of my said two other daughters Mary and Anne then I devise and will that their said respective shares of and in the said premises shall be and go to their respective sonns and daughters in taile in the same manner as my said daughter Elizabeth Said share is here in before lymitted with the like Estates thereof after the respective decease of my said daughters Mary and Anne or other sooner determination of their Estates unto the said Sr William Thomson and Robert Thomson and

their heirs to preserve the respective contingent Estate to the sonns and daughters as before in the case of my said daughter Elizabeth Provided nevertheless That if it please God that I shall have more or other daughters or a daughter hereafter born Then my will is that such my daughters or daughters hereafter at any time be born and her and their issue males and females shall be lett unto and have in every respect and in the same manner an equal benefitt and the like advantage of and in whatever either Reall or personall is herein devised or bequeathed to my said three daughters herein expressly names with my said daughters And as they said Three daughters and their issues are brought to have by force of this my last will And as for and concerning all my land, tenaments and hereditaments lying and being in the County of Cornwall I give and devise the same in case my said wife shall be enjoint and with child at the time of my decease unto my said wife until she shall be delivered or dye which of them shall first happen upon Trust and for the benefitt of all and every my daughters born or to be born att the time of my decease And the heirs of their respective bodies issueing And from and after the death or delivery of my said wife which shall first happen or in case my said wife shall not be enjoint att the time of my decease, then I give and devise all my said lands, Tenaments and hereditaments in the said County of Cornwall unto all and every my daughters born or to be borne at the time of my decease Equally to be divided between them and in common and not jointly and to the respective heirs of their respective bodyes to be lawfully begotten And for default of such issue I give my said lands Tenaments and hereditaments in the said County of Cornwall unto my said sonne Hele Hooke and to the heirs of his body begotten *Provided* always And my will is that in case all or any of my daughters their or any of their executors or Administrators upon request to be made unto them respectively or their respective executors on that behalfe by my Executors or Administrators or any of them shall refuse to discharge, grant and sufficiently release to the use of this my last will their respective interests Trust and benefit that they or any of them have or shall or may have or clayme of and in all and every or any of the summes of money by me or any others for me placed and put into the Stocke of the East India Company in London Then such and for many of my said daughters and their respective executors and administrators who shall soe refuse shall not take nor have any benefitt by this my will AND as for my lands tenements and hereditaments in the County of Devon I give and devise the same in case my said wife shall happen to be enjoint with child or children att the time of my decease unto my said wife until she be delivered of such or children or dye which shall first happen upon Trust and for the Trustee of such child or children if it be a sonne or sonnes And if it be a daughter or daughters then upon Trust and for the benefitt of such person or persons to whom the next immediate or remainder of the next before devised Lands, Tenements and hereditaments in the County of Devon shall belong And if such afterborne Child or Children be a sonn or sonnes Then I devise and give the said Lands, Tenements and hereditaments in the County of Devon unto such afterborn sonne and sonns and his and their heirs forever Item in case my said wife shall happen be enjoint with a

sonne or sonnes att the time of my decease I give and bequeath unto such sonne and sonnes the sum of five thousand pounds to be equally divided between them in case there be more such afterborn sonns then one And if but one then I give the said five thousand pounds entire to him to be paid unto him or them at his or their age or ages of 21 years And if any of the said afterborne sonns happen to dye before the time hereby appointed for the payment of the said money legacies and without issue of their bodyes living at the time of their decease then I will that the said legacie and share of and in the said five thousand pounds of the said afterborne sonns soe dying without issue shall goe and accrew by way of to the surviving afterborne sonne or sonnes And if such afterborne sonn or sonns shall all happen to dye before the time hereby appointed for the payment of their said legacies then the whole bequest of said five thousand pounds to be void as if the same had never been given. Item I give unto my sonne Hele Hooke my study of books and the Diemond Ring I usually wear which I bought of Mr. Winge. Item in case any or all of my daughters borne or to be borne at the time of my decease shall marry by and with the proper consent of my said wife, Sr William Thomson of London Knight and the Lady Thomson his wife, father and mother of my said wife or by and with the proper consent or the survivor or survivors of them then and not otherwise I give and bequeath unto each of my said daughters so marrying over and above the summes of money otherwise provided for their portions by a settlement of certain Lands by me lately made the summe of five hundred pounds apiece to be paid them respectively upon their said respective marriages yet nevertheless my will is that if all or any my said daughters shall first marry after the decease of the said Sr William Thomson, the said Lady Thomson and my said wife soe that such consent as aforesaid cannot be had Then such of my said daughters for marrying shall respectively have their said respective legacies of five hundred pounds upon their respective days of marriage anything herein before expressed to the contrary notwithstanding. Item I give unto my said *sister Dorothy Aldworth* fifty pounds. Item I give unto my neice *Mary Aldworth* the summe of three hundred pounds And to my neices *Elizabeth, Dorothy* and *Cicely Aldworth* two hundred pounds apiece The said summe of five hundred pounds and the said respective summes of two hundred pounds to be paid unto my said neices at their respective days of marriage or when they shall respectively attain their ages of 21 years which of them shall first happen And my will is that in case one or more of the said children of my sister Aldworth shall happen to dye before their respective portions shall become payable to them as aforesaid then the portion or portions of such of them soe dying shall goe unto and be equally divided amongst the survivor or survivors of them And in case they shall all happen to dye before any of their portions shall become payable to them as aforesaid Then I will that the said legacies given to my said sister *Aldworth's* children shall cease and be void as if the same had never been given. Item I give unto my *sister Mary Scrope* fifty pounds Item I give unto my neice *Mary Scrope* three hundred pounds And unto my nephew *Thomas Scrope* three hundred pounds And unto my neice *Elizabeth Scrope* two hundred pounds And unto my said *sister Scrope's* other two youngest daughters two hundred

pounds apeece The said respective summs of three hundred pounds and the said respective summes of two hundred pounds to be paid unto my said neices and nephews att their respective days of marriage or when they shall respectively attain their ages of 21 years which of them shall first happen. And my will is that in case one or more of the said children of my sister *Scrope* shall happen to dye before their respective portions shall become payable to them as aforesaid then the portion or portions of such of them soe dying shall go unto and be equally divided amongst the survivor or survivors of them And in case they shall all happen to dye before any of their portions shall become payable to them as aforesaid then I will that the said legacie given to my said *Sister Scrope's* children shall cease and be void as if the same had never been given. Item I give unto my servant Robert Holmes (if living with me at the time of my decease) fifty pounds. All The Rest and Residue of my personal estate whatsoever I give unto my son Hele Hooke. And further will that whatever of my personal estate is or ought to go be and remain wits my sonne Hele by force hereof in case he dye before he attain the age of 21 years shall be paid and given unto such of the persons hereinbefore named or their issues as shall then happen to be my heirs at law. AND I further will that the personall Estate and legacies herein bequeathed unto my said sonne Hele with the proceed Thereof be not paid in case he soe long live untill hee attain the age of twenty fouer And I will and devise that my Executors hereinafter named and the survivors of them doe make the best improvement they can and how they think fitt of my personall estate for the benefitt of those to whom I have disposed the same which improvement shall be disposed of in the same manner and to the same persons I have disposed my personall Estate sant—that it is not my intention that my sister *Aldworth* and sister *Scrope's* children shall take any benefitt of such improvement but that they onely have the summs of money without improvement bequeathed to them And that the improvement of their portions shall goe and be to and for the benefitt of my Residuary Legacie And my will and meaning is that my Executors, etc., or either of them shall not be att or lyable to pay or answer the coste that may happen in or by improvement or employing or putting out my said personall Estate for the purpose of improvement. AND I DOE hereby make and appoint the said Sr William Thomson and Robert Thomson Esquire brother of the said Sr William Executors of this my last will and Testament in Trust to perform and execute the same by and according to the true intent thereof And as for the profitt of my lands, Tenements and hereditaments hereinbefore devised to my sonne Hele in possession or that shall mediately or immediately descend to him from me in possession before he attains the age of 24 years I doe hereby desire and my will is that the said Sr William Thomson during his life and afterwards the said Robert Thomson during his life and afterwards the executors or administrators of the said Sr William doe take and receive the same until my said sonne shall or should if he had lived attaine the age of 24 years And therewith in case my said personal Estate shall not be thereunto sufficient discharge and satisfy my debts and the legacies herein given And what of the same profitts there shall be or remaine after my debts and

legacies paid and discharged I will that the same with the proceed thereof be paid to my sonne Hele his executors or administrators when he shall or should if he had attaine the age of 24 years PROVIDED nevertheless and my will is that in case he dye before his age of 21 years without issue of his body then living then the same shall be paid and given unto such of the persons hereinbefore named or their issues who shall then happen to be my heirs at Law But if the said Hele have issue at the time of his decease then the same to goe and be paid equally amongst the said issues And as for the proffitts of my Lands, Tenements and hereditaments lying and being in the said County of Cornwall which I have herein given to my daughter as aforesaid I doe desire and my will is that the said Sr William Thomson during his life and afterwards the said Robert Thomson during his life And afterwards the executors or Administrators of the said Sr. William Thomson doe take and receive the same in manner following (that is to say) of each of my said daughters parts and shares of and in the said Lands Tenements and hereditaments in the said County of Cornwall until she shall attain the age of 22 years or be married which of them shall first happen and then shall render the profitts of such share with the proceeds thereof unto such daughter provided nevertheless and my will is that in case any or all of my said daughters shall happen to dye unmarried before shee or they attaine the age of 21 years then her and their share of and in the proffitts of the said Lands Tenements and hereditaments in Cornwall with the proceed thereof shall goe and be paid unto my son Hele Hooke his executors Administrators when he shall or should if he had lived attain the age of 24 years Soe nevertheless that in case her dye before his age of 21 years without issue of his body then living then the same shall be paid and given unto such of the persons hereinbefore named or their issues who shall then happen to be my heir at law And if the said Hele shall have issue att the time of his decease then the same to goe and be paid equally amongst his said issue And as for the proffitts of my lands Tenements and hereditaments lying and being in the said County of Devon in case my said wife shall be enjoint with a sonne or sonnes att the time of my decease which afterwards may be borne alive I doe desire and my will is that the said Sr William Thomson during his life and afterwards the said Robert Thomson during his life and afterwards the executors and Administrators of the said Sr William doe take and receive the same with the proceed thereof for the benefitt of such afterborne sonne or sonnes to be paid unto them or him their executors or Administrators att their age of 24 years Soe nevertheless that if such afterborne sonn or sonnes happen all to dye before he or they attain the age of 21 years then the same shall be paid unto my sonne Hele his executors and administrators when he shall or should if he had lived attaine the age of 24 years Soe nevertheless that in case my said sonne Hele dye before his age of 21 years without issue of his body then living then the same shall be paid and given unto such of the persons hereinbefore named as their issues who shall then happen to be my heirs at law But if the said Hele have issue att the time of his decease then the same shall goe and be paid equally amongst his said issue. And my further will is that the said Sr William Thomson during his life and afterwards the said Robert Thomson during his life And after-

wards the executors and Administrators of the said Sr William shall make such allowances unto all my children borne or to be born as they shall think fitt (out of what shall respectively belong unto my said children) further maintenance until they shall or ought respectively according to the lymittations herein expressed To have and receive in possession what hereby is designed and willed unto them And soe shall till that time have the guardianshipp and Tuition of my said children by and with the advice of my said wife soe being as it shall please God she live And I doe hereby further will and declare that my said executors etc. shall and may expend and lay out in and about my funerall any summ or summs of money to be had and raised by and out of my personal estate soe that the summes of money soe to be expended exceed not the summ of four hundred pounds Provided also and it is my will whereas upon my marriage settlement. The manor of Frampton upon Severin in the County of Gloucester is assured to me for life and after to my first sonne in taile and for my other sonnes And since the said settlement I have alsoe leased some part of the same mannor to divers persons for their lives or for terms of years determinable upon their deaths Soe that their estates if I dye before them will be lyable to be defeated by my sonnes and the issues of their bodys That the said Hele Hooke my first sonne and the issues of his body shall make good my said grants and agreements to and with all and every my before mentioned Lessees and Tenants of my said lands and hereditaments soe that they may hold and enjoy the same according to the purport and true interest of my said grants and agreements. And my will is that if my said sonne Hele Hook or the issue of his body shall refuse soe to do Then I will that my said executors and the Survivor of them and the executor or the survivor of them shall by and out of the benefitt and interest that my said sonne Hele and his issues are or ought to have in and by this my will satisfy and recompence my Lessees and Tenants for the loan they may or shall sustaine by reason of the Breach and avoiding of my said grants and agreements.

In Wittness whereof I have hereunto sett my hand seale the first of December 1677—Tho. Hooke.

I doe give and bequeath unto my sister Aldworth over and above what is given her in this my will Two Hundred Pounds to be paid her within a year after my decease. And I doe give to my nephew Tho. Aldworth one hundred pounds to be paid him when he shall attaine 16 years of age And in case he dye before that time the said legacie of one hundred pounds is given to my sister Aldworth to be paid within one month after the death of my said nephew he dying before he shall so attaine 16 years of age. And this I doe declare to be part of my will.

Witness my hand and seale the day and year hereinafter mentioned. Tho. Hooke.

This writing was signed and sealed and delivered and published and declared to be the last will and Testament of the before mentioned Sr Thomas Hooke It containing three sheets of paper and oathe sheets subscribed by the hand writing of Sr Thomas Hooke And in the first sheet thereof the

lowermost four lines and neere the half of another being first crossed out And the word (Norfolk) being first underlined between the three and four and thirtieth lines of the said first sheet And on the backside of the second sheet there is a devise or legacie unto my sister Aldworth and her son (in which are some blottings out also) Testified by my hand and seale. And at the latter end of the Third sheet the quantity of one line (though composed of five) And five short lines and a half more under that blotted out And a little peice of paper of the last sheet on which this is written Nynne lines and a half likewise blotted out upon the day of the date of the within written will being the first day of December 1677 in the presence of John Hammer, Robert Holmes, Robert Meade, Thomas Hemaway. In the second sheets about two half lines and (after the interposition of one line) about half a line more And in the last sheet a quarter of a line and two lines and a half a line together and about five lines after a little more blotted out. This writing was again by the within mentioned Sr Thomas Hooke the second day of December 1677. Signed and sealed and delivered and published and declared to be his last will and Testament in the presence of vs Tho Hooke John Hammar, Robert Holmes, Robert Meade Thomas Hemaway.

Whereas I have heretofore given my wife as much money as did purchase one Action in the East India Company's Lands which she has since enjoyed it being in the name of her particular trustee My will is And I doe bequeathe unto her such Action above mentioned. I doe give unto my Brother Jackson, twenty pounds to mourne. I doe give unto my Sister Alford twenty pounds to mourne And to Collonell Alford her husband ten pounds to mourne. I doe give unto John Hammer twenty pounds as a token of my love. I doe give unto each of my servants to whom I have not before in my will given any legacie one years wages apeice. I doe give unto Doctor Goodwin, Dr. Owen and Mr. Collins two hundred pounds to be disposed of as they or the survivor of them shall see good. I doe give unto the minister of the parish where I shall be Buried for my funerall Dues five pounds And to the Clerk and Sexton Two pounds And to the poor of the parish where I shall be buried Ten Pounds. I doe give unto my Three Daughters besides what I have given them already in my will five hundred pounds apeice to be paid at their days of marriage or when they shall attaine their age of one and twenty years which shall first happen And in case one or more of them shall happen to dye before marriage or before attaining one and twenty years in such case what so given to shee or they soe dying I doe give unto my sonne Hele Hooke. This I doe publish and declare as part of my will And desire it may be added thereto Witness my hand and Seale the second day of December 1677—Tho. Hooke in the presence of Hen. Perin, Dorothy Aldworth Robert Holmes.

I Desire that this may be added to my will as part thereof. I doe give unto Sr William Thomson and Robert Thomson Esquire my house parke and land thereto belonging called Tangeir Park in the County of Southampton And all other the lands, Tenaments and hereaditaments in the said county which I doe hould or any to my use or in trust for me by lease or leases from the Deane and Chapter of Winchester with power to them or either of

them to make sale Thereof as conveniently maybe in trust only to the purposes following That with the money it shall yield or with any part thereof a convenient house in London or a house with some lands last neere London may be bought for the use of my wife during her widdowhood onely and when she shall first after my decease marry or dye which shall first happen to the use of my sonne Hele Hooke and his heirs And in case any overplus of money shall be not laid out in the purchase of a house or a house and land I doe give unto my sonne Hele Hooke And in case he dye before one and twenty years I doe give it unto my Three Daughters and the survivors of them. I doe give to my cousin Michael Pindar Twenty pounds I doe give to my Sister Aldworth one hundred pounds for her tenderness to me in my sickness. This I doe publish and declare to be part of my will Witnesse my hand and seale the fowerth day of December 1677—Tho. Hooke—
In the presence of us Hen. Perin, Robert Holmes Robert Meade.

Probate records added in Latin.

WILL OF SIR HUMPHREY HOOKE GRANDSON OF
ALDERMAN HUMPHREY HOOKE

IN THE NAME OF GOD AMEN I, Sir Humphrey Hooke of Kings Weston in the county of Glouc. Knight being infirmed in body but of sound disposing mind and understanding for which I give thanks unto Almighty God do make and ordaine this my last will and Testament in manner and form following And first I comend and comitt my soule unto God that gave it trusting to obtain remission of all my sinns and an inheritance with the saints in life Everlasting through the love and mercy of Jesus Christ my only Saviour and redeemer. And my body I comitt to the earth from whence it came to be buried in the parish church of St. Stephens in the City of Bristoll as near as conveniently may be unto the place where my late Grandfather and Grandmother Hooke were buried in such decent manner as my Executors hereinafter named shall think fit and for that worldly estate which God of his mercy hath lent me I dispose hereof as followeth, (that is to say) First I give unto the poor people of the parish of Henbury in the County of Glouc. the summe of Ten pounds to be distributed and disposed of unto and amongst them as my Executors shall think fitt, also I give unto such minister of the said parish of St. Stephens as shall be incumbent there at the time of my decease the summe of five pounds to preach my funerall sermon alsoe I give unto my brother Sir Thomas Hooke and the Lady Elizabeth his wife the Summe of Twenty pounds to buy them mourning and to my sister Aldworth and sister Scropps ten pounds apeece to buy them mourning, And whereas I am indebted unto Thomas Earle of Bristol and several other persons in considerable summs of money for security whereof I have mortgaged several mannors, lands and Tenements and hereditaments and have acknowledged several statutes and judgments and given other securities all of which I desire may be paid with all convenient speed that

may be to which end and purpose I give, devise and bequeath unto my brother-in-law Sir Hugh Smith Kt. of the Bath and Baronet and my loving Friends William Cook, Esq., Christopher Cole Esq. and John Clement Gent. and the survivor and survivors of them and their heirs and assigns of the survivors of them All and singular my mannors, missuages, Land, Tenements and Hereditaments situated within the several parishes and hamlets of Henbury, Westbury upon Trim Kinges Weston, Lawrence Weston, Frampton Cottrell, Frampton upon Seavorn, Northwick and Redwick Awre or Olsewherd in the aforesaid County of Glouc. which were not formerly by me settled in joynture on my wife with their and every of their rights, royalties, jurisdictions, liberties and appurtenances And alsoe all my messuages, houses Lands, and Tenements with their appurtenances situated within the City of Bristol aforesaid whereof I stand seized in fee simply, And all my estate and interest both in law and equity therein and thereunto and all my power, benefit and equity of redemption thereof, To have and to hold all and singular the said mannors, missuages, Lands and premises unto the said Sr. Hugh Smith, William Cooke, Christopher Cole and John Clement and the survivors and survivors of them and the heirs and assigns of the survivor of them forever to the intents and upon the trusts hereinafter mentioned. Alsoe I give devise and bequeath unto the said Sr. Hugh Smith, William Cooke, Christopher Cole and John Clement and the Executors, Administrators and assigns of the Survivor of them all that my mansion house and other my missuages, Tenements and houses situated in the marsh or elsewhere within the City of Bristoll aforesaid together with the outhouses gardens and appurtenances to the same respectively belonging and all my affairs both in Law and Equity herein and hereinto and all my power, benefitt and equity of redemption in and to the same, And I doe further give unto the said Sr. Hugh Smith, William Cooke, Christopher Cole and John Clement their Executors Administrators and assigns all such debts and summes of money as are or shall be owing unto me at the time of my death as executor of the last will of my late Grandmother Hooke deceased or otherwise from any p-son or p-sons whatsoever and all Judgments statutes, specialties and securities whatsoever given for the same all of which said mannors Lands, Tenements hereditaments and promises soe as aforesaid given, devised or bequeathed unto the said Sr. Hugh Smith, William Cooke, Christopher Cole and John Clement I do hereby declare are soe given, devised and bequeathed upon trust and to the intent following (that is to say) that they or any three of them and the survivor or survivors of them and the heirs, Executors Administrators and assigns of the survivor of them doe and shall with all commission speed make sale of all or any the said mannors, missuages Lands Tenements, hereditaments, chattells and premises for all my estate, terms and interest thereon according to their best discretion and with the money thereby raised and the money due and oweing unto me which shall by them received doe and shall in the first place pay, satisfy and discharge all and every the mortgages and other incumbrances whatsoever wherewith the said respective mannors, missuages Lands, Tenements and premises or any part thereof stands charged and in the next place all other incumbrances whatsoever wherewith any other mannors, Lands or Tene-

ments are any waies encumbred of stand lyable to and shall employ the overplus of the said moneys if any shall be towards the payment of such other debts as I shall owe at the time of my death And after all my debts shall be paid and satisfied then I give, devise and bequeath so much of my said mannors, missuages Lands and premises as shall remain unsold for the purpose aforesaid if any shall be unto my three daughters Florence, Mary and Martha and the heirs of their bodies, And for want of such heirs to the heirs of my own body And for want of such heirs unto my said brother Sr Thomas Hooke and the heirs male of his body and for want of such issue to my own right heirs forever, And my will further is that what overplus of the said moneys, soe and aforesaid to be raised out of my Lands and Tenements which shall be sold for the purposes aforesaid, shall be resting in the hands of the said Sr Hugh Smith, William Cook, Christopher Cole and John Clement or either of them after my said debts, Legacies paid and Lands discharged of incumbrances shall be paid and disposed of and I doe hereby give the same in manner following (that is to say) Two full parts thereof the whole into four equal parts to be divided unto my well beloved wife Florence but my will and desire nevertheless is that if Isaac Dycner the husband of my said Daughter Florence shall within convenient time by good assurance in law settle and assure unto and upon my said Daughter and the issue of her body by him begotten such a competent Joynter as my said wife or Trustees and the survivors of them shall approve of that then my said wife shall pay unto my said Daughter our moety of the said moneys herein before given to my said wife. And the other two parts of the said moneys soe as aforesaid remaining in the hands of my said Trustees I give unto my said two daughters Mary and Martha equally to be divided between them to be paid unto them with the increase thereof (if any can be made) at their respective ages of one and twenty years or daies of marriage (which shall first happen) And if either dye before their portion of her soe dying to remaine and be paid to the survivor of them but my will is that my said Trustees and the survivor of them his heirs and assigns shall in the first place reimburse and satisfy themselves out of the moneys by them to be raised out of all or any part of the missuages, Lands and premises aforesaid all such costs, damages and expenses, as they or either of them shall sustaine, expend or be put unto for or by reason of the execution or acceptance of any the Trustees hereinbefore by me imposed in them or otherwise

with my estate. Alsoe I give unto Dame Florence my and my best bed and bedstead with the appurtenances and all the furniture now being in the best chamber in my house at Kinges Weston All the rest and residue of my goods Jewells, plate, rings household stuff and impliments of household whatsoever I give and bequeath unto my said Three Daughters Florence, Mary and Martha equally to be divided between them but nevertheless my will is that my said wife shall have the reasonable usage of all my said household goods and implements of household during so long time as she shall live after my decease a widdow sole and unmarried she giveing to my Executors an inventory of the same goods with her own engagement for delivery of the same to my said children imeadiately from and after my decease or marriage (which shall first happen) in such manner as herein-

before is appointed, And my desire is that my said wife shall take care for the maintenance and education of my said two younger daughters until they shall become capable to receive their portion. And I doe make and constitute the said Sr Hugh Smith, William Cooke, Christopher Cole and John Clement, Executors of this my last will and Testament and doe give unto them the summe of Ten pounds apeece as token of my love and I doe hereby revoke and make void all former and other wills by me heretofore made in wittness whereof I the said Sr Humphrey Hooke have to this my last will and Testament contayned in three sheets of paper affixed together and sealed with my seale set my hand and seale this fourteenth day of October in the nine and twentieth year of the reign of our Soverign Lord Charles the Second by the grace of God King of England Anno qB Diu 1677.* Humphrey Hooke sealed and published by the Testator to be his last will and Testament in the presence of Dan Taylor, the marks of Edward Addison, Richard Hawkswork 23 August 1678. This paper writeing contening two sheets and half of paper was then produced to Richard Hawksworth and Edward Addison at the time of their examination at a commission executed at the Lamb in the City of Bristoll issued out of the high court of Chancery betweene Sr Hugh Smith Kt of the Bath and Barr't and others Comp^ls and Thomas Earle and others defendants on the Comp^ls parts to the By Interred befoe us Edward Strods, John Davies, Francis Yeamans, Wm. Moredith Decuno die October 1679. This paper writing contained in three sheets of paper was then produced to Richard Hawkswork and Edward Addison at their several examinations at the executions of a commission issued out of the high Court of Chancery between Sr Robert Southwill Kt and Dame Florence Hooke and defendants to the second and third. Etc. Balance in Latin.

* Cromwell won battle of Nasby 1645

King Charles I Executed Jan 30-1649. Evidently the Hooks would not recognize that Cromwell existed.

WILL OF FLORENCE HOOKE WIFE OF SIR HUMPHREY
HOOKE OF BRISTOL, ENGLAND, 1692

In the Name of God Amen: I Dame Florence Hooke of Kingsweston in the County of Glouc. widdow being weake and sick in body but of sound and disposing mind and understanding for which I give thanks unto Almighty God, Doe make and Ordaine this my Last Will and Testament in manner and forme following, that is to say first I commit my Soule into the hands of Almighty God my creator hoping through the means and meritts of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ to be made pertaken of Eternal Life and for my body I commit it to the earth from whence it came to be Interred in St. Stephens Church in Bristoll as near to the body of Sr. Humphrey Hooke my Late Husband deceased as conveniently may bee And my funerall to be in as decent and private manner as with conveniency it can—desireing that

the charge may not exceed Twenty pounds. All my goods, chattels, household stuff, plate, jewells and personal estate whatsoever, My debts, legacies and funerall expenses first discharged I give and bequeath unto my two daughters Mary Hooke—Martha Hooke whome I make and constitute my Sole Executrixts of this my Last Will and Testament And I desire and Appoint my worthy friend Sr. Samuell Asbery, Knight to be overseer of this my Last Will and Testament And to be aiding and assisting to—my said Executrixts in the execution thereof. Item I give unto my Grandchildren Humphrey, Florence and John Dymmer each of them a Guinney and to my Grandson Isaac two Guinneys Item I give to Edward Addison and every other such Servant as shall be living with mee at the time of my death Tenn shillings apeece Lastly I revoke all other former Wills whatsoever In witnesse whereof I have hereunto sett my hand and Seale this eighth day of September Anno Domini one thousand six hundred Ninety two. Flo. Hooke Signed Sealed and published by the Testatrix to bee her Last Will in the presence of Thomas Scrope, John Scrope, John Tutt.

Photostat copies of the above five wills were supplied by Somerset House in London. Said copies are in the possession of James W. Hook of New Haven, Connecticut.

